

**A  
GRAMMAR  
SPANISH AND  
ENGLISH:**

**OR**

**A BRIEF AND**

compendious Method, teaching to  
reade, write, speake, and pronounce  
the SPANISH TONGVE.

**COMPOSED IN FRENCH**

by *Cesar Oudin*, and by him the third time  
corrected and augmented.

Englished, and of many wants  
supplied, by *I.W.*

Who hath also translated out of Spanish the  
five Dialogues of *Iuan de Luna, Cast.* which  
are annexed to the Grammar.



**LONDON,**

Printed by *John Haviland* for *Edward Blount*, and are  
to be sold at the signe of the blacke Beare in  
Pauls Church-yard. 1622.



TO  
THE RIGHT  
HONORABLE

THOMAS Lord *Howard*, Maltre-  
uers, Mowbray, Segrave, Bruz,  
*Clun*, and *Oswestre*, Earle of *Arun-*  
*dell*, and *Surrey*, Earle Marshall of  
ENGLAND, Knight of the Noble  
order of the *Garter*, and one of  
his *Majesties* most Ho-  
norable Privy Counsell.



Since a booke (right  
Honorable) of this  
Nature, requires  
the necessitie of  
some worthy Pa-  
tron, I the rather presume with  
assumed

## The Epistle

*assumed boldnesse, to make choice of your Honour; knowing that mens labours in these daies are much vnder-valued, and indeed of no reckoning, without the iudicious to censure, and generous to countenance. Without these, what difference were there betwixt fables, and truths? Wretched Pamphlets, and noble Poems? Since then this age affords so many of Æsops Cocks, that prefer graine before pearle; and finding these two to concur in you, namely iudgement to determine, and vertue to incourage, I intreat these may mediate betwixt my rashnesse to dare, and your Lordships noblenesse to pardon: who haue beene a Mecænas to  
Arts,*

## Dedicatory.

*Arts, and haue to the world made manifest (which makes me so plaine without complement) your forwardnesse in the seruice of your King and Countrey; neither in hope of praise, expectation of reward, or least ayme of Ambition, but meere-ly in your vertue. Since all that know you know so much, what I from them haue learnt, giue mee leaue to acknowledge. That the worke were worthy your Honours patronage I could wish: wherein it fails I can but blush for the want: Accept it I beseech you, being the fruits of my loue, who am thus emboldned from the words of Helen: Quis enim succenset Amanti? and the rather, since it comes free-ly,*

I 3

The Epistle Dedicatory.  
*ly, and without expectation of any  
other returne from your Lordship,  
then your noble grace and fauour,  
which but in the smallest measure  
to attaine, I shall euer remaine*

Your HONOURS  
humbly deuoted,

I. W.

---

---



THE PREFACE TO  
the students of the SPAN-  
NISH Tongue.



Entlemen ( for such com-  
monly they be, who are  
addicted to the learning of  
forraine languages ) I pre-  
sent you with a Grammar ; and if you  
aske of what country she is, I answer of  
*Castile*, but brought vp in France, for that  
was the tongue she spoke, before I tu-  
tor'd her in the English. To be plaine,  
lighting by chance vpon this Gram-  
mar in French, I diligently perused it,  
and perceiuing all things therein, to be  
of great profit and furtherance to the  
speedy obtaining of the Spanish  
tongue, my owne iudgement perswa-  
ded me it was a good one, being secon-  
ded by the opinion of diuers others.



## THE PREFACE.

Wherefore importuned to translate it, that our English nation, although somewhat further distant, might as soon arrive in *Castile* as the Frenchmen, I halfe consented thereunto. But my expectation was deceived; for falling in hand with it, I found it impossible to retain the name of a meere translation, and be made perfect for the English: which as it differeth more from the Spanish, then doth the French, so it requireth in some points, more rules and observations; the which I trust I haue sufficiently supplied: And againe in some few, lesse, where I haue omitted what was altogether friuolous and impertinent. Neither could it be directly translated for another reason, which is, that all the Spanish parts, examples, and whatsoeuer else, being to cohere, and haue as much correspondency with the English, as it had with the French, it was requisite therein to regard onely the Spanish, and wholly to neglect the

## THE PREFACE.

translating of the said French; which doubtles would haue produced a great company of errors. So that there was not so much skil required in the French to translate this Grammar, as in the Spanish to make a fit coherencie betwixt the same and our English tongue.

As touching the course and order observed, it is according to the Author; saying that in the Verbs I haue somewhat (to the better I hope) altered it, and haue omitted two or three Verbes in a manner superfluous, for being Regulars, and supplied their roomes with as many indeed Irregular; wherewith I suppose that neither you nor any, can iustly bee offended. And to giue you the better satisfaction, I haue coniugated all the Verbes Irregulars, throughout euery Mood and Tense, with the English to them, which cannot I thinke, be found in any other Grammar extant. This at the first seemed to me sufficient, but comming to reuiew what I had lately written,

## THE PREFACE.

written, I considered how great an inconvenience was to follow for want of the true accent, and therefore willingly tooke vpon me to put an Acute as well vpon all the Spanish words in the Grammar, of two or more syllables (vnlesse any haue escaped by chance) as on all the Tenses singularly and plurally of euery Verbe that is coniugated therein: So that if it be wanting in any person, it must be made vpon the first letter of the word, being a capitall vowel, which could not conueniently be printed with an accent. And although this generall Accenting of words be commonly omitted by others, yet I esteeme it as a thing most requisite and materiall. For an euill habit is sooner at the first admitted, then afterward omitted; and he that in the beginning shall mis-accent words, will finde it more difficult to correct himselfe, then hee imagineth. And for that cause I was willing to reade a proofe of euery sheet before

## THE PREFACE.

before it was printed off, correcting whatsoever I could finde erroneous: and yet (as what Impression was euer knowne without?) I cannot warrant but that some faults or other haue escaped; which if they be not many, I presume my diligence in seeking to prevent them, will be a strong prouocative to pardon them.

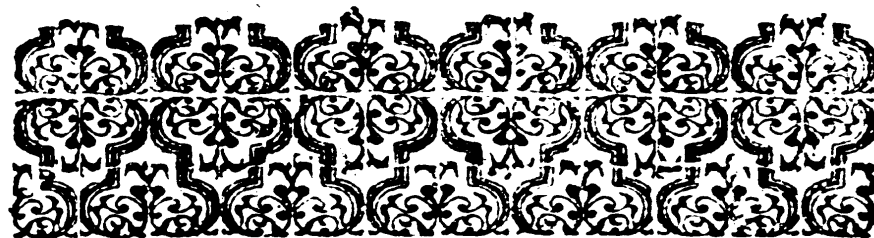
Here was the Grammar finished, but my desire to further you what I could, ended not so soone; for knowing well by experience, how much the reading of Dialogues aideth to the perfection of a vulgar Tongue, I was perswaded that my desire could no way be so fully accomplished, as in translating those of *Iuan de Luna*, being no lesse profitable then full of delight, and as full of delight as wittic. His booke containeth in all twelue Dialogues, but his owne are no more then fve, the rest being by him onely corrected, and already in English: which fve I haue translated and

## THE PREFACE.

and annexed to the end of the Grammar, and haue likewise accented all the words thereof, wherein I thought could be any possibilitie of erring.

Thus far (Gentlemen) I haue adu ventured, and for your good exposed my selfe to the common censure, which in this calumnious age, is seldome otherwise then detractiue. But let it passe; the booke is now yours : if you accept it thankfully, I shall account my trauell well bestowed, and the profit which I am confident you will receiue thereby, shall be to me an ample remuneration for the same.

I. W.



## A Table of the Chapters, and some particularities contained in this Grammar.

<b>O</b> f the Letters, and their pronounciation.	Pag. 1
untill pag. 8.	
Of the Article.	pag. 8
The declining of the Masculine, and Feminine article.	Ibid.
Of the Neuter article.	P. 9
The use of the Masculine article cl.	ibid.
Of the Feminine article la.	p. 10
Of the article lo.	p. 11
Of Nounes, and of their Genders.	ibid.
Of the terminations of the Plurall number,	p. 14
Of the declining of Nounes substantiues, as well proper as common.	p. 16
Of Nounes adiectiues, and their declining.	p. 19
Of Mucho, Poco, and Harto, adiectiues.	p. 22
Of Nounes deriuatiues.	ibid.
Of the termination of Nounes diminutiues.	p. 25
Of Nounes of number, and their terminations.	p. 26
Of Pronounes, and their nature.	p. 30
The declining of the Pronounes, from	p. 31. to p. 35
Of	

## The Contents.

<i>Of the Pronounes possessives.</i>	P.35
<i>Of the use of the Pronounes Cuyo, and cuya, from</i>	P. 37. to p.40
<i>Of the pronounciation of Vuestra merced.</i>	P.40
<i>Of other Pronounes demonstratives.</i>	P.41
<i>Of the signification of el, not being an article.</i>	P.44
<i>Of the Pronounes Ambos, and Entrambos.</i>	P.45
<i>Of the Pronounes Relatives.</i>	P.46
<i>Of the word quierain composition.</i>	P.49
<i>Of the Reciprocals me, te, se.</i>	ibid.
<i>Of the Verbe.</i>	P.51
<i>The declining of the Verbes Hauer and Tener.</i>	P.56
<i>The declining of the Verbes Ser and Estar.</i>	P.67
<i>How to forme the Tenses in euey Coniugation.</i>	P.75
<i>How to decline a Verbe of the first Coniugation.</i>	P.76
<i>How to decline a Verbe of the second Coniugation.</i>	P.82
<i>How to decline a Verbe of the third Coniugation.</i>	P.87
<i>The declining of the Verbe Holgar.</i>	P.93
<i>Of the Verbe Dar.</i>	P.98
<i>The declining of the Verbe Querer.</i>	ibid.
<i>The declining of the Verbe Poder.</i>	P.103
<i>The declining of the Verbe Hazer.</i>	P.107
<i>The declining of the Verbe Poner.</i>	P.111
<i>The declining of the Verbe Saber.</i>	P.115
<i>The declining of the Verbe Traer.</i>	P.119
<i>The declining of the Verbe Caber.</i>	P.123
<i>The declining of the Verbe Dezir.</i>	P.128
<i>The declining of the Verbes Dormir and Morir.</i>	P.132
<i>The declining of the Verbes yr and Andar.</i>	P.137
<i>The declining of the Verbe Venir.</i>	P.142
<i>The difference betweene Yo he venido, and yo soy venido.</i>	P.146
	Of

## The Contents.

<i>Of the composition of me, te, se, le, la, lo, les, las, los, with the Infinitives of Verbes.</i>	P.147
<i>Of the letter d, of the second person of the Imperative, which is transposed before the articles.</i>	ibid.
<i>How d, in the Imperative, and s, in the first person plurall of the Imperative and Future, is cut off by Apocope.</i>	ibid.
<i>How the letter r, is changed into l, in Infinitives, being ioyned to the article.</i>	ibidem.
<i>Of Verbes Passives.</i>	P.148
<i>Of Verbes Impersonals.</i>	P.149
<i>Of Gerunds.</i>	P.150
<i>Of Participles.</i>	P.152
<i>Of the Aduerbes.</i>	ibidem.
<i>Of the Aduerbes of Time.</i>	P.153
<i>Of the Aduerbs of place.</i>	P.155
<i>Aduerbs of number.</i>	P.158
<i>Aduerbs of quantitie.</i>	P.160
<i>Aduerbs of qualitie.</i>	P.162
<i>Aduerbs of negation.</i>	P.163
<i>Aduerbs of affirmation.</i>	P.164
<i>Aduerbs of wishing.</i>	P.165
<i>Aduerbs of admonishing, or exhorting.</i>	P.166
<i>And other qualities of Aduerbs till page 173</i>	
<i>Of the Prepositions.</i>	P.173
<i>Prepositions seruing to the Accusative case.</i>	P.175
<i>Of the Prepositions Por and Para.</i>	P.177
<i>Of the Coniunctions.</i>	P.179
<i>Of the Interiections.</i>	P.182
<i>The difference of pronounciation betweene ay Verbe Impersonall, and ay Aduerbe of place.</i>	P.183
<i>How the letter s, is lost before r, and the said r, doubled.</i>	P.186
	Of

## The Contents.

*Of the word Hidepúta.*

*ibidem.*

*Of the word Hidalgo.*

*p. 187*

*Of the Comparisons proper to the Spanish tongue.*

*page 189*

*See the rest, which is of words put downe in an Alphabetical order, from page 194. to the page 209.*

*Of the accent that ought to be made in the Spanish pronunciation, page 109. unto the end.*

An end of the Table.

I



# A SPANISH GRAMMAR, explicated in English.

*And first concerning the Letters, and  
their Pronunciation.*



Haue not thought it expedient to detaine the Readers with definitions and diuisions of GRAMMAR, for so much as those that are learned haue nothing to doe therewith; and such as can only reade the vulgar English, would profit themselves but little by the same. It shall suffice therefore to explaine and lay open so much as shall be possible, the difficultie of the Spanish pronunciation, the which (as a principall part of a Language) consisteth in knowing first how to expresse the letters, next the syllables, and lastly the words. I shall hereafter come to the parts of speech, the which with the best of my skill I doe intend to explicate. It is then behouefull to forme in the first place a Spanish Alphabet, which is as followeth.

B

A, a,

*A, a, b, c, ç, d, e, f, g, h, ch, j, i, y, l, ll, m, n, ñ, o, p, q, r, s, t, u, v, x, z.*

Now all the difficultie and difference that is betwixt the Spanish and the English tongue, consisteth in these thirteene letters.

*b, ç, d, g, h, ch, j, ll, ñ, u* vowell, *v* consonant, *x* and *z*.

The first is *b*, which is indifferently written for *v* consonant, and reciprocally the one for the other, being both alike in pronunciation, not commonly sounded as *b*, or *v*, in English, but rather betwixt both, notioyning the lips so hard one against another as we doe, but leauing some little passage free for the breath betwixt them. And for prooffe hereof, they both are many times found written in the selfe-same words, as *Sábana* and *Sávana*, *Sábio* and *Sávio*, and so almost of all. Neuerthelesse it is to be noted that this is before the vowell, and not before the consonant liquids *l* and *r*, for they should not properly write *Havlár* for *Hablár*, nor *Hómure* in stead of *Hómbre*, which would bring another inconuenience: notwithstanding that, it behoueth to sound the said *b* as in other words before the vowell.

The second is *ç*, called in Spanish *c con cedilla*, or *cerilla*, which is not placed but before *a, o, and u*, and it is of like force with the ordinary *c* put before *e & i*, or with the letter *s*: and those are deceiued who in writing Spanish, place the said *ç* before *e* or *i*; or at leastwise it is superfluous.

There are diuers Spanish words found written by *sc*, and by *c* only, but their pronunciation is alike, as *mereścér* and *merecér*.

The third is *d*, which hath his proper sound in the beginning

beginning of words, as *Digo, dicho, dádiva*. But in middle syllables, and in the end, it is pronounced like *th* in English, as *Cadena* a chaine, *Virtúd* virtue; say *Cathena*, and *Virtúth*: except it be in some words that come from the Latine, as *Prudente*, and when it followeth the letter *n*, as *Quándo, Amándo, Leyéndo*, and not *Quántho, Amántho, Leyéntho*.

The fourth is *g* before *e* and *i*, the pronunciation wherof is formed in the palate of the mouth, doubling the end of the tongue vpward, and pushing it downe towards the throat, and it hath some affinitie with *sh* in English. But before *a, o, and u*, it hath the same pronunciation as in other Languages.

The fift is *h*, which in the beginning and middle of words, if *u* and some other vowell (being commonly *e*) doe follow it, *hu* is then pronounced like *w* in English, as *Huélgo, vihuéla, huéuo, huéssó, huérfano, huéssed*, and diuers others; all which are sounded as *Welgo, viwela, wenuo, wessó, wcrfano, wessed*, &c. Furthermore, *h* is left vnpronounced in the beginning of many words, as in *Hauér, Hábito, kómbre, humildád, hónrra*, and diuers others: and againe in many it is vsed with an aspiration, as in *Hazér, higo, hábla, hígado*, and a great company more. But seeing there can no perfect rule be giuen, teaching when *h* is vsed with his aspiration, and when not, I referre it to vse, for but with little practise, it will seeme no difficultie at all.

The sixt is *ch*, which is pronounced as in the English word *Charitie*, or *Choice*, as *Múcho, Muchácho, Burrácho*, and the like. Excepting such words as come from the Latine, as *Monarchia, Tetrarchia, Ierarchia*.

The seuenth is *j* consonant (which the Spaniards call

call *jota*) and they pronounce it almost like *Shota*, doubling the end of the tongue, as I haue already said in the letter *g*, and sounding it in the throat, and not as *yota*, in three syllables.

It is requisite to note, that there is great affinitie of pronounciation betweene the letter *g*, put before *e* or *i*; the *jota*, which is set before *a*, *o*, and *u*, seldome before *e*, and neuer before *i*; and the *x*, which is ioyned to all the vowels. For I haue obserued that words are indifferently written by these three letters, as *tixéras*, *tigéras*, and *tijéras*, which signifieth Cisfers: *Trabájo*, I haue read *traváxo*, and *trabáxo*, trauell. And the said affinitie may easily be perceiued, or at leastwise that of the *g* and *jota*, for so much as when a verbe is found written with *g* before *e* or *i* in the infinitiue mood, the vowel changing into some other, that is, into *a* or *o*, in the other moods of the said verbe, it is likewise behouefull to change the *g* into *j*. Example, *Coger* Infinitiue, maketh in the Optatiue and Subiunctiue *Cója*, and not *Cóga*; *Elegir* is changed into *Elíja*, *regir* into *ríja*, &c.

I will furthermore say that touching the two others *i* and *y*, (both which are pronounced as double *ee* in English) they ought not to be confounded in writing the one for the other, but it is requisite to know that *i* simple is euermore ioyned to consonants in the same syllable before or after, as in this word *Infinito*; sometimes also it maketh a syllable apart, as *Imitár*, and it is not put into a diphthong, vnlesse it be in the following of some consonant, as in *Grácia* and *Glória*. But *y* is ioyned to other vowels to make a diphthong, as in *yazér*, *yúgo*, *mayór*, and others; and sometimes it maketh a syllable apart, as in *Leydo*, and *Oydo*, which are trisyllables; sometimes also it is put with the

the consonant, but it must be before it, and at the beginning of the word, as in *yquierdo*, *yçár*, *yr*, and some few others.

The eighth is *ll*, being pronounced both in the beginning and in the middle of words, as if the latter *l* were an *i*; as for example, *llaga* a wound, which is vttered as though it were written *liaga*, yet in such wise conioyned, that it is made but two syllables; so *llamar*, *llorar*, *batalla*, *querella*, pronounced as if they were written *liamar*, *liorar*, *batália*, *querélia*. But it is to be noted that *ll* is found in some words that are rather Latine or Italian, then Spanish, as *Illústre*, *excellente*, *Camello*, *Túllio*, in which it ought not to be pronounced; and they that write well, set them downe thus, *Ilústre*, *exelente*, *Camílo*, *Túlio*, with single *l*, which is farre the better.

The ninth is *ñ*, called *n tilde*, or *n* with a rittle, sounded as if an *i* were set after it, as *Españól* a Spaniard, in which word Spaniard the pronounciation may easily be perceiued. It is sometimes written with double *nn*, but it is for want of this character *ñ*, so that it is not found but in such books as are printed out of Spaine. The Spaniards moreouer doe not double any of the consonants, excepting *x* and *s*, and sometimes *m*, before which they put for the most part an *n*, as *Enmendár* in stead of *emmendár*.

The tenth is *u* vowel, the which in Spanish, and almost in all other Languages, is pronounced as *oo* in English.

The eleuenth is *v* consonant, which is in nothing different from *b*, as I haue said before.

The twelfth is *x*, which is sounded very rudely before a vowel, and somewhat more then *jota*, although there be very great affinitie betweene them,



but the *x* is vttered more in the throat, being so likewise at the end of a word, as *carcax*, *relóx*, &c.

Note that when *x* is in a word compounded of the preposition *ex*, it then retaineth its naturall pronunciation, which is common to other Languages. I haue read *escépto* for *excépto*, for *x* is commonly sounded as *s* if a consonant follow it.

The last is *z*, which sometimes is pronounced more rudely then *c* or *s*, but commonly it hath the sound of *c*, and I haue oftentimes seene it written *hacér* for *bazér*, *liénço* for *liénzo*, *báço* substantiue, which signifieth the spleene, or *báço* adiectiue, that is to say, browne, as *pán báço*, browne bread: I haue seene it written *vázco*, putting the *v* for *b*, and *z* for *c*; and whosoeuer looketh into the words that end with the said *z*, shall finde it differ in nothing from the *s*, when it endeth a word likewise, except it be pronounced with a graue accent.

As touching the rest of the letters, they neither differ from the English, nor other foraine Languages, only the *g* is pronounced as *coo* in English. It will not be from the purpose to declare in this place that *gn* in Spanish is not sounded as in French, but as if the *g* were separated from the *n*; as *Díño* shall be read *dí-g-no*: and the Spaniards themselves oftentimes leaue out the *g*, putting *díno* for *díño*, *siniscár* instead of *significár*. The *r* is pronounced very hard, as *árre*, and the *s* as *éffe*. I will adde hereunto moreover, that the Spaniards neuer write *t* hauing the nature of *c*, as in these words, *grácia*, *ación*, *dición*, *intención*, and infinite more, you shall not finde *t* before the *i*, for that the said *t* is alwayes pronounced in one manner, as in these words, *Títiro*, *Tibério*, *Tiráno*, &c.

Hauing now spoken concerning the letters simple,  
it

it is not requisite to omit the pronunciation of these syllables, *gué* and *quí*, *qué* and *qui*, which are not founded as in other Languages: the two first are pronounced as in the English words *quest* and *guide*, provided that the *i* be sounded as I haue said: and the two latter, which are *gué* and *quí*, be pronounced like *ke* and *kee* in English; as for example, *quebrár* to breake, *quitár* to take away, sound them like *kebrár*, *keetár*. From *gué* are excepted these that follow, wherein *u* is sounded.

*Aguélo*, a Grandfather.

*Ciguéña*, a Storke.

*Aguéro*, a Soothsayer.

*Guéro*, an addle egge.

*Verguénça*, shame.

*Siguénça*, a Cities name in Spaine.

*Garguéro*, the wesand, or wind-pipe.

*Halaguéño*, fawning, flattering, or he that flattereth.

*Pediguéño*, an earnest suiter, or wanton.

*Reguéldo*, a belching, and I belch, from *Regoldár*.

And

*Deguéllo*, I behead, from *Degollár*: changing the *o* of the infinitiue mood into *ue*, in some tenses and persons of their coniugation, as it shall be seene when we come to speake of the Verbes.

Also those Verbes that haue *guár* in the infinitiue mood, doe follow the same exception, where in their Aorists they are found to haue *gué*, as *menguár* *mengué*, *aguár* *agué*, *fraguár* *fragué*, *auerriguár* *auerrigué*, and others, all which are pronounced with the sound of the *u*, as is said.

From *quí*, I haue not found any excepted but *arguýr*, pronounced as *argooyr*.

It is also to be noted, that there are some words which



which be written by *quá*, as *quáfi*, *qualidád*, wherein the *u* is not sounded, but *cáfi*, and *calidád* ; also this is their true Orthography.

### Of the Article.

**H**Auing spoken concerning the Letters, we must now come vnto the words, which are the parts of Speech, the first whereof is the Article which is declined alone, and serueth to the declination of the other parts declinable, not knowing the variation of the cases by any other meanes then by the same.

It is therefore requisite to note, that there are three Articles, and of three genders as the Nounes, although concerning Nounes there are found in vulgar Languages but two, the masculine and the feminine. The Spaniards haue an Article of the neuter gender, but not Nounes, or at leastwise not Substantiuies. The masculine is *el*, the feminine *la*, and the neuter *lo*, and they are thus declined.

#### The declination of the Masculine Article.

	Singular.	Plurall.
Nom.	<i>el</i> , the.	<i>los</i> .
Gen.	<i>del</i> , of the.	<i>de los</i> .
Dat.	<i>al</i> , to the.	<i>à los</i> .
Accus.	<i>el</i> , <i>al</i> , the.	<i>los</i> & <i>à los</i> .
Ablat.	<i>del</i> , from the.	<i>de los</i> .

#### Of the Feminine Article.

	Singular.	Plurall.
Nom.	<i>la</i> .	<i>las</i> .
Gen.	<i>de la</i> .	<i>de las</i> .
Dat.	<i>à la</i> .	<i>à las</i> .
Accus.	<i>la</i> and <i>à la</i> .	<i>las</i> & <i>à las</i> .
Ablat.	<i>de la</i> .	<i>de las</i> .

The

### The Neuter Article.

#### Singular.

Nom.	<i>lo</i> , it.	<i>lo</i> is not declined in the plurall.
Gen.	<i>de lo</i> , of it.	
Dat.	<i>a lo</i> , to it.	
Accus.	<i>lo</i> , it.	
Ablat.	<i>de lo</i> , from it.	

As for this article *lo*, it cannot be applied to a Noun, but rather seemeth to be a Pronoun Demonstratiue, or a Relatiue of the neuter gender, which is not ioyned to any Noun Substantiue or Adiectiue, so that there is no need of a neuter article in the Language, which admitteth no Nounes of the neuter gender.

Examples shall be giuen hereof when we speake of the Pronounes in generall, where we will shew it to be sometimes a Demonstratiue, and sometimes a Relatiue.

### The use of Articles, and first of the Masculine.

The article *el* is put euer with a Noun of the masculine gender, beginning either with a vowell, or a consonant, and sometimes it is ioyned to Nounes feminines, and principally to those that begin with *a*, and that to auoid the ill sound of the meeting of two *a*, as for example.

*El ánima*, *el águá*, sound better then if one should say, *la ánima*, *la águá*, in which of necessitie the mouth must be opened very wide (as when one gatheth) by reason of doubling the *a*.

The aforesaid article *el*, turned backward, which maketh *le*, is oftentimes put at the end of a Verbe, and then

then it is a Relatiue, as *llamádle, dezídle*, which signifie in English, call him, tell him.

It is fit to declare here that the Spaniards haue a manner of speaking by the third person for the second, vsing this article *el*, and *le*, in stead of *vos*, or *vuestra merced*; whereof *vos* is a meane word, and as little vsed as *thou* in English: but this title of *vuestra merced*, being too much for all sorts of persons, they haue a meane which is this third person, taking the article *el* and *le*, as I haue said. Example: *Si el quiere hazérlo; y el que ha dicho? que le digo? que le dixo?* Which may be said in English: If you will doe it; And you, what haue you said? what doe I say to you? what said he to you?

And they not only vse this manner of speaking in the third person with the article *el* or *le*, but without the same, and being vnderstood with the verbe: or also *vuestra merced* may be vnderstood, hauing repeated it once or twice in a speech, and is not alwayes materiall to reiterate it; as also in writing it is no grace at all to vse it ouer-often.

It is likewise to be considered that this title *vuestra merced*, is not so common in Spanish, as the Spaniards themselves doe vse it being out of their owne Country, but that it is rather an affected curtesie, then a true obseruation of their language. It is to be beleued that they vse this fashion of speaking in the third person, for neither to extoll nor abase such as they speake to: but aboue all, it is meet to haue a respect to the qualitie of those we speake to, whether they be better or meaner then our selues.

*Of the Feminine article la.*

The article *la* is euer put before Nounes feminines, as *la mugér, la casa*, excepting such as begin with *a*,

as is said before, the which haue the masculine article *el*.

This article put after a Verbe, assumeth the nature of a Pronoun Relatiue, so well as the article *le*.

*Of the article lo.*

Although I haue aboue said that *lo* is not an article, not being found in the Language any Nounes neuters Substantiues, whereto it might be applied, notwithstanding there are some Nounes Adiectiues made Substantiues, to the which it is ioyned, as *tódo lo bueno, tódo lo malo*, all the good, or all that which is good, all the euill, or all that which is euill.

It is also put with the Verbe, where it seemeth to be superfluous, and then it is a Relatiue or Demonstratiue: example, *Quánto dixéres tódo lo aprueño*, I approue all that which thou shalt say, or to speake by the same phrase, All that which thou shalt say, I doe approue it all; wherein is perceiued in two places the force of *lo*, for in stead of *Quánto*, it might be said, *Tódo quánto dixéres aprueño*, and that for so much as *lo* is both demonstratiue and relatiue.

*Of Nounes, and of their Genders.*

Cæsar Oudin hath spoken but little concerning the Genders of Nounes, passing it sleightly ouer with this excuse, that they are seldome put without an Article, or Adiectiue, whereby their Gender may be knowne: for (saith he) by the termination it would be a matter very difficult to distinguish them.

Notwithstanding I haue thought it conuenient to speake somewhat concerning this effect, for that I haue obserued Substantiues very often (although he saith but seldome) to be put without either Adiectiue  
or

or Article, and many times with an Adiective seruing both to the Masculine and Feminine, or else with *mi, tu, su*, and their plurals *mis, tus, sus*, which are common to both Genders: and therefore I haue taken paines to gather the most compendious Rules I could possible for this purpose, and haue read ouer seuerall bookes, the better to confirme them, excepting all such words, as I haue found therein to be contrary vnto them.

### The first Rule.

Note therefore that all Nounes, of whatsoeuer termination they be, including the signification of the Male, are Masculines. Whereunto shall be added those that end in *e, i, o, u, l, n, r, s, x*, as *mónte, marauedí, sombréro, impetu, papél, corazón, dolor, lúnes, relóx*.

These following are excepted, which although they end, as we haue said, are Feminines.

From *e* are excepted, *arte, áue, cálle, córte, corriente, costumbre, fuente, gente, hambre, leche, lláue, lumbre, muerte, náue, niéue, nóche, parte, puente, sangre, serpiente, suerte*, &c.

From *i* or *y*, I haue not read any excepted, sauing only *ley*.

From *o*; *máno* and *náo*. From *u*, I cannot finde any excepted.

From *l*; *cál, canál, sál, cárcel, hiél, miél, piél*, &c.

From *n*; *Opinión, razón, sazón, órden, sartén, ymágen*; and those that end in *ción, sion*, and *ssion*, as *Contrición, prisión, remission*.

From *r*; *Colór, flór*, and *már*, which is sometimes written, *el már*.

From *s* and *x*, I haue not found any excepted.

The

### The second Rule.

All Nounes of what termination soeuer, including the signification of the Female, are Feminines. To which shall be added those that end in *a, d, z*, as *Ca-béça, lealdád, páz*.

These following, notwithstanding they end, as I haue said, are Feminines.

From *a*, is excepted, *Día, planéta*, &c.

From *d*; *Atáúd*, and *láud*, which is sometimes Feminine.

From *z*; *Agráz, almiréz, arróz, albornóz, arcabúz*.

### The third Rule.

Nounes neuters either end in *e* or *o*; as *Caliente, buéno*. But to know the difference betwixt the Masculines, and Neuters, being both of one termination, it behoueth to note that the Masculine is taken for particular things, as *el mónte, el cámpo*; and the Neuter for things generall drawne from their subiect, as *lo valiente, lo negro, lo blanco*, &c. which as they be Neuters, haue not the plurall number.

Note that all Substantiues ending in *or*, doe make the feminine by adding *a*, as *Amadór, Amadóra, Dançadór, Dançadóra*.

Most Substantiues ending in *o*, make their feminine by changing *o* into *a*; as, *Hermáno, Hermána; Suégro, Suégro*: but this rule holdeth not alwayes.

Adiectiues ending in *e, l*, or *z*, are of the common of two gender, as *Hómbre inocente, mugér impudente, cámpo fértil, cosa fácil, perro rapáz, hembra sagáz*.

Adiectiues

Adiectives in *o*, make their feminine by changing *o* into *a*, as *buéno, buena; málo, mala.*

*Of the terminations of the plurall number.*

Being sufficiently knowne what is a number in Grammar, it shall suffice to shew the termination of Nounes in the plurall: for the singular will easily be knowne by the discourse, or by some article adioyned, ending for the most part in vowels, and others in certaine consonants which shall be seene here following.

It is fit then to know that all Spanish Nounes ending with a vowell in the singular, doe forme their plurall, by adding thereunto an *s*, as *hómbre, hombres, canállo, canállos, &c.*

But those that end with consonants in the singular, take *es* to the plurall, whereto are added such as doe end in *y*: and to make them appeare more euident, I will here set downe the finall consonants, which be these, *d, l, n, r, s, x, y*, and *z*, of all which shall be giuen examples. And first of those ending in *d*.

Sing.	Plur.
<i>Verdad,</i>	<i>Verdades.</i>
<i>mercéd,</i>	<i>mercedes.</i>
<i>líd,</i>	<i>lides.</i>
<i>virtúd,</i>	<i>virtudes.</i>

*Secondly in l.*

Sing.	Plur.
<i>Animál,</i>	<i>Animáles,</i>
<i>batél,</i>	<i>batéles,</i>

*badil,*

<i>badil,</i>	<i>badiles,</i>
<i>caracól,</i>	<i>caracóles.</i>
<i>azúl,</i>	<i>azúles.</i>

*In n.*

Sing.	Plur.
<i>Pán,</i>	<i>Pánes.</i>
<i>almazén,</i>	<i>almazénes.</i>
<i>celemin,</i>	<i>celeminés.</i>
<i>blasón,</i>	<i>blasónes.</i>
<i>atún,</i>	<i>atúnes.</i>

*In r.*

Sing.	Plur.
<i>Pesár,</i>	<i>Pesáres.</i>
<i>mugér,</i>	<i>mugéres.</i>
<i>mártyr,</i>	<i>márttyres.</i>
<i>dolór,</i>	<i>dolóres.</i>

*In s.*

Sing.	Plur.
<i>Diós,</i>	<i>Dióses.</i>
<i>feligrés,</i>	<i>feligrésses.</i>
<i>miés,</i>	<i>miésses.</i>
<i>més,</i>	<i>méses.</i>
<i>montañés,</i>	<i>montañésses.</i>

*In x.*

Those that end in *x* doe sometimes change the said *x* in their plurall, taking *g* in the place thereof, as

Sing.

Sing.	Plur.
<i>Carcax,</i> <i>relóx,</i>	<i>Carcáges.</i> <i>relóges.</i>

In *y*.

Sing.	Plur.
<i>Buëy,</i> <i>Réy,</i>	<i>Buëyes.</i> <i>Réyes.</i>

In *z*.

Sing.	Plur.
<i>Páz,</i> <i>juéz,</i> <i>perdíx,</i> <i>bóz,</i> <i>crúz,</i>	<i>Pázes.</i> <i>juézes.</i> <i>perdízes.</i> <i>bózes.</i> <i>crúzes.</i>

To conclude, it is euident that all plurals haue, and that there are found but very few singulars which haue it.

*Concerning the declination of Nounes Substantiues,*  
*as well proper as common.*

Although it be sufficient for the declining of Nounes, to know how to decline the Articles, for that the Nounes themselues doe not vary their cases, but only the said Article, as is said before: notwithstanding it will not be ill to set downe some examples of the diuers natures of Nounes, as well proper as common, Substantiues as Adiectiues, and of

of those that seeme to be Neuters; to which the Article *lo* is ioyned. It is furthermore requisite to note that Nounes proper haue not the Article in the Nominatiue case; and it also seemeth that they are not serued thereof in the rest, but of certaine Particles, which seeme to be and are indeed Prepositions; as in the Genitiue *de*, in the Datiue *a*, and sometimes *a* in the Accusatiue: in the Vocatiue they haue the Aduerbe *o*, and in the Ablatiue *de*, as in the Genitiue.

### Example of Nounes Proper:

Nom. <i>Pédro.</i>	<i>Catalina.</i>
Gen. <i>de Pédro.</i>	<i>de Catalina.</i>
Dat. <i>à Pédro.</i>	<i>à Catalina.</i>
Accus. <i>Pédro, or à Pédro.</i>	<i>Catalina or à Catalina.</i>
Vocat. <i>ò Pédro.</i>	<i>ò Catalina.</i>
Ablat. <i>de Pédro.</i>	<i>de Catalina.</i>

### Example of Nounes Common.

Singular.	Plurall.
Nom. <i>El Padre,</i>	<i>Los Padres.</i>
Gen. <i>del Padre,</i>	<i>de los Padres.</i>
Dat. <i>al Padre,</i>	<i>à los Padres.</i>
Accus. <i>el Padre, or al Padre,</i>	<i>los Padres, or à los Pa-</i>
Vocat. <i>o Padre,</i>	<i>o Padres. (dres.</i>
Ablat. <i>del Padre,</i>	<i>de los Padres.</i>

Singular.	Plurall.
Nom. <i>El Animál,</i>	<i>Los animales.</i>
Gen. <i>del animál,</i>	<i>de los animales.</i>
	Dat.

Dat. <i>al animál,</i>	<i>à los animáles.</i>
Accus. <i>el animál, or al Animál,</i>	<i>los animáles, or à los animáles.</i>
Vocat. <i>o animál,</i>	<i>o animáles.</i>
Ablat. <i>del animál,</i>	<i>de los animáles.</i>

Singular.

Plurall.

Nom. <i>El Pán,</i>	<i>Los Pánes.</i>
Gen. <i>del pan,</i>	<i>de los pánes.</i>
Dat. <i>al pan,</i>	<i>à los pánes.</i>
Accus. <i>el pan,</i>	<i>los pánes.</i>
Ablat. <i>del pan,</i>	<i>de los pánes.</i>

Singular.

Plurall.

Nom. <i>El pesár,</i>	<i>Los pesáres.</i>
Gen. <i>del pesár,</i>	<i>de los pesáres.</i>
Dat. <i>al pesár,</i>	<i>à los pesáres.</i>
Accus. <i>el pesár,</i>	<i>los pesáres.</i>
Ablat. <i>del pesár,</i>	<i>de los pesáres.</i>

Singular.

Plurall.

Nom. <i>El relóx,</i>	<i>Los relóges.</i>
Gen. <i>del relóx,</i>	<i>de los relóges.</i>
Dat. <i>al relóx,</i>	<i>à los relóges.</i>
Accus. <i>el relóx,</i>	<i>los relóges.</i>
Ablat. <i>del relóx,</i>	<i>de los relóges.</i>

Singular.

Plurall.

Nom. <i>La mugér,</i>	<i>Las mugéres.</i>
Gen. <i>de la mugér,</i>	<i>de las mugéres.</i>
Dat. <i>à la mugér,</i>	<i>à las mugéres.</i>
Accus. <i>la mugér, or à la mugér,</i>	<i>las mugéres, or à las mugéres.</i>
Vocat. <i>o mugér,</i>	<i>o mugéres.</i>
Ablat. <i>de la mugér.</i>	<i>de las mugéres.</i>

Of

*Of Nounes Adiectives, and their declining.*

Nounes Adiectives haue two terminations, the one in *o*, or Masculine, which is changed into *a*, or Feminine, the other in *e*, which is common to both Genders. I haue formerly said that some Nounes Adiectives are changed into Substantiues, and then they be Neuters admitting the article *lo*, and there are two terminations thereof as I haue shewed before; that is in *o* and in *e*, as *lo buéno*, *lo málo*, *lo gránde*. Marke how they are declined, and first the Masculine.

Singular.

Plurall.

Nom. <i>El buéno,</i>	<i>los buénos.</i>
Gen. <i>del buéno,</i>	<i>de los buénos.</i>
Dat. <i>al buéno,</i>	<i>à los buénos.</i>
Accus. <i>el buéno,</i>	<i>los buénos.</i>
Vocat. <i>o buéno,</i>	<i>o buénos.</i>
Ablat. <i>del buéno,</i>	<i>de los buénos.</i>

*The Feminine.*

Singular.

Plurall.

Nom. <i>La buéna,</i>	<i>Las buénas.</i>
Gen. <i>de la buéna,</i>	<i>de las buénas.</i>
Dat. <i>à la buéna,</i>	<i>à las buénas.</i>
Accus. <i>la buéna,</i>	<i>las buénas.</i>
Vocat. <i>o buéna,</i>	<i>o buénas.</i>
Ablat. <i>de la buéna,</i>	<i>de las buénas.</i>

*Example of the Common.*

Singular.

Plurall.

Nom. <i>El gránde,</i>	<i>Los grándes.</i>
Gen. <i>del gránde,</i>	<i>de los grándes.</i>

Dat.

Dat.	al gránde,	à los grándes.
Accuf.	el gránde,	los grándes.
Vocat.	o gránde,	o grándes.
Ablat.	del gránde,	de los grándes.

The Neuters are declined in this manner,  
with the article lo.

## Singular.

Nom.	Lo gránde.	Lo buéno.
Gen.	de lo gránde.	de lo buéno.
Dat.	à lo gránde.	à lo buéno.
Accuf.	lo gránde.	lo buéno.
Vocat.	o gránde.	o buéno.
Ablat.	de lo gránde.	de lo buéno.

And so of the rest without the plurall.

Notethat this word *gránde*, put before a Substantiue beginninig with a consonant, loseth the last syllable. Example, *grán mugér*, *grán tiempo*; but before a vowell it remaineth entire, as *gránde ánimo*, *gránde hómbré*, although the *e* be in some sort drowned before the said vowell, and this abreuiaction is onely made in the singular number.

Also that word *buéno*, when it is placed immediately before his Substantiue, doth cut off his finall vowell. Example, *el buén hómbré*, but being put after it doth retaine it, as *el hómbré buéno*: *Málo* followeth the same rule, for they say, *Mál hómbré*, and *hómbré málo*. I said immediately, for some word being interposed, the vowell remaineth in force.

*Táto* and *quánto* are likewise bereft of their last syllable, when they are put before the Adiectiue or Aduerbe, and sometimes before the Substantiue: as *Tan gránde*, *tan buéno*, *tan tarde*, *tan solamente*; *Tan*  
*púta*

*púta vieja* éra tu mádre cómo yo: *Quán mal* parece *éssa* color de *esperança*. *Quan bien* lo háze *V.M.* but being found before these two Aduerbs of comparison *Más* and *Ménos*, they are spoken at large, as *Quánto mas* *tánto ménos*, and in case also they precede the comparatiue Nounes *mayór* and *menór*. Example, *Quánto mayór es la fortuna*, *tánto ménos es segura*.

It is requisite in construction to put the article with the Adiectiue, when it is ioyned with his Substantiue, as *El buén hómbré*, *la hermosa mugér*; but Pronounes haue not the same priuiledge: for if the speech doe begin therewith, they shall not haue an article as in Italian. Example, *Vuestra hermosa es tal*, *que atráe a vuestro amor a quántos la miran*.

The Italian would say *La vostra bellezza è tale*, *che atráe al vostro amore quant la riguardano*, where still the Article is ioyned to the Pronoun: In English we vse it not there, for we say, Your beauty is such that it attracteth vnto your loue all those that doe behold it.

As touching the Noun Adiectiue Neuter, it will alwaies require his article *lo*, for it rather seemeth to be a Substantiue then an Adiectiue, as are *Lo buéno*, *lo dulce*, *lo amargo*, *lo ageno*, *lo málo*. Notwithstanding it is excepted when it is put with the Verbe *ser*; as *buéno es amar a Dios*, It is good to loue God. *Málo es hurtar*, It is ill to steale. *Prouecho so es enseñár*, It is profitable to teach. The Article *el* may sometimes be put before the infinitiue moode in the like sense. Example, *Málo es el hurtar*, stealing is an euill thing: in which manner of speaking the infinitiue is made a Noun.

There be made Nounes Neuters possessiues of these Pronounes, *lo mio*, *lo tuyo*, *lo suyo*, *lo nuestro*, *lo*  
*vuestro*

*vuestro*: Which signifie mine, or that which is mine, thine, his, ours, yours, or that which is yours: It is to be vnderstood of goods that a man possesseth. Example, *no quiero perder lo mio*, I will not lose mine owne. *Parta Dios de lo suyo contigo*, God make thee partaker of his, or of his graces.

### Of Mucho, Poco, and Harto.

*Mucho* and *Poco*, although they bee Aduerbs of quantity, notwithstanding they are Nounes Neuters, as *lo mucho*, *lo Poco*; but being Adiectiues they are found in the Masculine and Feminine Gender, and change into *a*, hauing the force of Aduerbs, and then they are ioyned to things without life, or that signifie weight or measure, as *mucho vino*, *mucho agua*, *mucho dinero*, *mucho azeyte*, *poco vinagre*, *poca harina*. And it may not be said, *mucho hombre*, *mucho muger*, nor *poco hombre*, *poca muger*, in the singular number; but in the plurall they are indifferently ioyned to all Nounes, either things with life or without life: for so much as these Nounes signifying quantity, may not be put with a thing vndiuidable, as is a thing with life, but in the plurall there is diuision made of diuers: *Harto* receiue both the Masculine and Feminine Gender, for they say, *Harto* and *Harta* in the nature Adiectiues, signifying the same that the Aduerbe (for the true Noun is in English, full and satisfied) and hauing likewise both numbers, as *Harto vino*, *harta carne*, *hartos hombres*, *hartas mugeres*, where all foure signifie Enough.

### Of Nounes Deriuatiues.

There be Nounes which in effect are Deriuatiues or Denominatiues, for that they be deriued of others,

thers, and all of them end in one of these two terminations, *oso* and *ero*; *Valeroso*, *virtuoso*, *amoroso*, *marauilloso*, of *valor*, *virtud*, *amor*, *marauilla*, which denote the abundance of a thing, as valorous, vertuous, amorous, maruellous. They admit all the three genders, and are declined as other Nounes Adiectiues in this manner.

### SINGVLAR.

	Masc.	Fem.
Nom.	<i>El valeroso,</i>	<i>La valerosa.</i>
Gen.	<i>del valeroso,</i>	<i>de la valerosa.</i>
Dat.	<i>al valeroso,</i>	<i>a la valerosa.</i>
Accus.	<i>el valeroso,</i>	<i>la valerosa.</i>
Vocat.	<i>o valeroso,</i>	<i>o valerosa.</i>
Ablat.	<i>del valeroso.</i>	<i>de la valerosa.</i>

### PLVRALL.

	Masc.	Fem.
Nom.	<i>Los valerosos,</i>	<i>Las valerosas.</i>
Gen.	<i>de los valerosos,</i>	<i>de las valerosas.</i>
Dat.	<i>a los valerosos,</i>	<i>a las valerosas.</i>
Accus.	<i>los valerosos,</i>	<i>las valerosas.</i>
Vocat.	<i>o valerosos,</i>	<i>o valerosas.</i>
Ablat.	<i>de los valerosos.</i>	<i>de las valerosas.</i>

### Neuter.

Nom.	<i>Lo valeroso.</i>
Gen.	<i>de lo valeroso.</i>
Dat.	<i>a lo valeroso.</i>
Accus.	<i>lo valeroso.</i>
Ablat.	<i>de lo valeroso.</i>



And those that end in *éro*, doe for the most part denote the office of the Noun from whence they are deriued; as,

*Aguadéro de agua*, a Water-bearer.

*Baruéro de barua*, a Barber.

*Carnicéro de carne*, a Butcher.

*çapatéro de çapato*, a Shoo-maker.

*Espacéro de espada*, a Cutler.

*Hechizéro de hechizo*, a Sorcerer.

*Iubonéro de jubón*, a Dublet maker.

*Limosnéro de Limónas*, an Almoner.

*Mesonéro de mesón*, an Inne-keeper.

*Panadéro de pán*, a Baker, a Pantler.

*Ropacugéro de ropa vieja*, a Broker.

*Santéro de Santo*, a Clerke of a Church.

*Tauernéro de tauerna*, a Vintner.

*Trapéro de trapa*, a Drapier.

*Violéro de vihuéla*, a player on the Violl.

*Xabonéro de xabón*, a Seller or Maker of Sope.

But these doe not admit all the three Genders, for they haue not the Neuter, neither doe some forme the Feminine, & they are those which haue some occupation or office not proper to women, as *Espadéro*, *aguadéro*, *carnicéro*, *çapatéro*: Yet neuertheless one may well say *Aguadéra*, a woman Waterer, for that in *Paris*, *London*, and diuer places there are many of them, but the word common in Spanish.

There are other deriuatiues ending in *ido*, some of them being deriued of Nounes, and others of Verbs; the former are Nounes Adiectiues: as,

*Dolorido de dolor*, Dolorous, or grieued.

*Descolorido de colór*, Stained, or faded.

*Desabrido de sabor*, Vnsauory, without taste;

by a metaphor it signifieth, troublesome, vnpleasant.

*Perdido de perdér*, Lost.

*Venido de venir*, Come.

Whereof shall be spoken more at large, when we come to treat of the Participles.

### Of the termination of Nounes Diminutiues.

Nounes Diminutiues haue two common terminations, which are *illo* and *ico*; but in many bookes I haue obserued a third, which is *ito*: an Example of all.

*Asnillo*, a little Ass.

*Cestillo*, a little Basket.

*Loquillo*, a little Foole.

*Montezillo*, a little mountaine or hill.

But note that the Spaniards doe very much confound them, and without other example then the foure words aboue written, the three terminations may be seene, for they say *Asnico* so well as *Asnillo*; *Loquito* as *Loquillo*; *Montezico* as *Montezillo*: Notwithstanding it shall not be ill to say that all those of one termination, haue not continually all the rest, as for *loquillo* and *loquito*, one may not say *loquico*: *cestico* is said, but not *cestico*, and so in like sort of others, which the studious shall be able with diligence to distinguish, being sufficient for me to haue shewed the termination of the Noun Diminutiue, but howsoever we will not omit the Feminine, for there is also thereof; as,

*Artezilla*, a little Art or Science.

*Partezilla*, a little part or parcell.

*Damilla*, a little Gentle-woman.

*Bouilla*, a little foole or idiotesse.

The Spaniards in flattering and making much of any one vie these Diminutives in *ito* and *ico*, rather then that of *illo*, which serueth to expresse the diminution of the thing, without consideration of amitie, or a kinde manner of speaking.

Moreouer, there is another termination of Diminutives in *uelo*, with *u* vowell, as *Cuerpezuelo*, a little bodie; *boyezuelo*, a little oxe; *borrachuelo*, a little drunkard; *hijuelo*, a little childe, or a little sonne; *moçuelo*, a little boy; *necenzuelo*, a little foole; *pañizuelo*, a ragge, it signifieth properly a handkerchiefe. The feminines change only the finall *o* into *a*, as *hijuéla*, *moçuéla*, *calabazuéla*, a little Pompion; *migajuéla*, a little crum of bread; *lagartijuéla*, a little Lizard. I haue also found *cigónino*, which hath a different termination from all the rest, and is the diminutive of *ciguéña*. In reading peradventure one may meet with some others, which shall be knowne by their signification, and these here set downe shall suffice for an example.

### Of Nounes of number, and their terminations.

The Spanish Nounes of number haue diuers terminations, although they haue but one number, the first excepted, that is *uno*, which admitteth a plurall, and is said *unos*, hauing the signification of *algunos*, in English, some; as *auiá unos hombres*, there was some men: *una* maketh also in the plurall *unas*, & is as much as to say *algunas*. The rest are not found but in the singular, as is said before: and know that this Noun *uno* is of the same nature of *buéno*, in regard of the composition: for placing the said *uno* before his substantiue or adiectiue masculine, it loseth the finall vowell,

vowell, as *un hombre*, a man; *un vellaco*, a wicked, or slothfull person. But the feminine which maketh *una*, followeth not the same rule, for it doth not lose the *a*.

In like sort (as we haue said of *buéno*) if some word be interposed betweene *uno* and his substantiue, or that *uno* be put after, then it retaineth his vowell, as *el uno es hombre de bien*, *destos dos el uno es vellaco*, the one is an honest man; the one of these two is a lewd fellow. And the same is also when it is of the neuter gender: example, *lo uno y lo otro va bien*, the one and the other goes well, *id est*, all goeth well.

We will here following set downe all Nounes of number, being very necessarie to be knowne, and they are

<i>Vn, uno, una,</i>	One.
<i>dós,</i>	two.
<i>trés,</i>	three.
<i>quátro,</i>	four.
<i>cínco,</i>	fiue.
<i>seys,</i>	six.
<i>siéte,</i>	seuen.
<i>ócho,</i>	eight.
<i>nuéue,</i>	nine.
<i>díez,</i>	ten.
<i>ónze,</i>	eleuen.
<i>dóze,</i>	twelue.
<i>tréze,</i>	thirteene.
<i>satórze,</i>	fourteene.
<i>quínze,</i>	fifteene.
<i>deziseis or diez y seis,</i>	sixteene.
<i>díez y siéte,</i>	seuentee.
<i>díez y ócho,</i>	eighteene.

<i>díez y nueue,</i>	nineteene.
<i>véynte,</i>	twenty.
<i>véynte y uno,</i>	twenty one.
<i>véynte y dos, &amp;c.</i>	twenty two, &c.
<i>tréynta,</i>	thirty.
<i>quarénta,</i>	forty.
<i>cincuénta,</i>	fifty.
<i>sesénta,</i>	sixty.
<i>seténta,</i>	seuenty.
<i>ochénta,</i>	eighty.
<i>nouénta,</i>	ninety.
<i>ciento,</i>	an hundred.
<i>ciento y uno, &amp;c.</i>	an hundred and one, &c.
<i>ciento y díez,</i>	an hundred and ten.
<i>ciento y véynte, &amp;c.</i>	six score, &c.
<i>doziéntos,</i>	two hundred.
<i>treziéntos,</i>	three hundred.
<i>quatrociéntos,</i>	four hundred.
<i>quiniéntos,</i>	five hundred.
<i>seyciéntos,</i>	six hundred.
<i>seteciéntos,</i>	seven hundred.
<i>ochociéntos,</i>	eight hundred.
<i>noueciéntos,</i>	nine hundred.
<i>Míl, or uncuénto,</i>	a thousand.
<i>dos míl,</i>	two thousand.
<i>tres míl,</i>	three thousand.
<i>cien míl,</i>	an hundred thousand.
<i>doziéntos míl,</i>	two hundred thousand.
<i>quiniéntos míl, &amp;c.</i>	five hundred thousand, &c.
	to a million.
<i>un millón or millón,</i>	a million.
<i>dos millones, &amp;c.</i>	two millions, &c.

These numbers *doziéntos*, *treziéntos*, and so forth, till a thousand, doe admit the feminine gender, when they

they are put before a Noun of the said gender; as

*Doziéntas mugéres,* two hundred women.

*Treziéntas donzéllas,* three hundred damsels.

This number *ciento*, being put before a Noun, doth altogether lose the second syllable, and is said, *cién hombres*, and not *ciento hombres*.

One may well say thus, *un ciento de ducádos*, but then there is *un* before, and *de* after the said *ciento*, and it shall not be said immediatly, *ciento ducádos*, but *cién ducádos*.

Beside the numbers aboue written, which are Cardinall (for so the Author calls them) there are moreover numbers Ordinall, or signifying order, to wit,

<i>Primero,</i> First.	<i>Séxto,</i>	Sixt.
<i>Segúndo,</i> Second.	<i>Séptimo</i> or <i>seteno,</i>	Seuenth.
<i>Tercero,</i> Third.	<i>Oétáuo,</i>	Eighth.
<i>Quárto,</i> Fourth.	<i>Nóno</i> or <i>nouéno,</i>	Ninth.
<i>Quínto,</i> Fift.	<i>Décimo</i> or <i>dezéno,</i>	Tenth.

Some there be that leaue here the number Ordinall, and take the Cardinall in place thereof, as to say the eleuenth chapter, they say *Capítulo ónze*, &c. Notwithstanding there are properly found these five, to wit,

<i>Onzéno,</i>	Eleuenth.
<i>Dozéno,</i>	Twelfth.
<i>Trezéno,</i>	Thirteenth.
<i>Catorzéno,</i>	Fourteenth.
<i>Quinzéno,</i>	Fifteenth.

And after these the number Cardinall must be vsed for the Ordinall. Notwithstanding I haue read *Undécimo*, *duodécimo*, *decimotértio*, *decimoquárto*, *decimoquínto*, *decimosexto*, *decimoséptimo*, *decimooétáuo*, *decimo*

*decimonóno*. There are also found, *veinténo*, *treyténo*, *quarenténo*, *cinquenténo*, *sesenténo*, *setenténo*, *ochenténo*, *nouenténo* and *ciénto*. And yet otherwise almost according to the Latine; as, *vigésimo*, *trigésimo*, *quadragesimo*, and *quarentésimo*, *quinquagésimo*, and *cincuentésimo*, *sexagésimo*, and *sesentésimo*, *septuagésimo*, and *setentésimo*, *octuagésimo*, and *ochentésimo*, *nonagésimo*, and *nouentésimo*, *centésimo*; to which in their place are adioyned, *Primo*, *segúndo*, *tércio*, *quárto*, &c. and not to the former: for they doe not say, *veynténo primo*, nor *trezenténo segúndo*, but *vigésimo primo*, *segúndo*, &c. It is fit also to note that it may not rightly be said *vigésimo priméro*, nor *vigésimo tercéro*, but *primo* and *tércio*.

### Of Pronounes and their Nature.

**P**RONOUNES are certaine words vsed in the place of Nounes, and serue onely to demonstrate, without nominating the person or the thing, or else repeating it hauing beene nominated before. There be diuers natures thereof, some Primitiues, others Deriuatiues, of which some are Demonstratiues, others Possessiues, Relatiues, and Reciprocales. All the which sorts being sufficiently knowne, it will not be needfull furthermore to define them; but it shall suffice to set downe in part their pertinences, and to declare their vse.

The Primitiues (as all the rest) haue two genders; the masculine and feminine: two Numbers as Nounes, but they haue three persons, and they bee these, *yó*, *tu*, and *de sí*, in the Genitiue, for it wanteth the Nominatiue. *Yo* serueth to the first person, *Tu* to the second, and *de sí* to the third, being declined as followeth.

The

### The declining of the Pronoun of the first person.

#### SINGVLAR.

Nom.	<i>Yo,</i>	I.
Gen.	<i>de mi,</i>	of me.
Dat.	<i>à mi,</i>	to me.
Accus.	<i>me or per mi,</i>	me, or by me.
Ablat.	<i>de mi.</i>	from me.

#### PLVRALL.

<i>Nos, nosótro,</i>	Wee.
<i>de nos, de nosótro,</i>	of vs.
<i>à nos, à nosótro,</i>	to vs.
<i>nos, nosótro,</i> or <i>por nosótro,</i>	vs, or for vs.
<i>de nos, de nosótro.</i>	of vs.

### The Declining of the Pronoun of the second person.

#### SINGVLAR.

Nom.	<i>Tu,</i>	Thou.
Gen.	<i>de ti,</i>	of thee.
Dat.	<i>à ti,</i>	to thee.
Accus.	<i>te, or por ti,</i>	thee, or by thee.
Vocat.	<i>o tu,</i>	ô thou.
Ablat.	<i>de ti.</i>	from thee.

#### PLVRALL.

<i>Vos, vosótro,</i>	Yee, or you.
<i>de vos, de vosótro,</i>	of you.

<i>à vos, à vosótro.</i>	to you.
<i>vos, vosótro, or por vosótro,</i>	you or by you.
<i>o vos, o vosótro,</i>	o yee, or you.
<i>de vos, de vosótro,</i>	from you.

These two serue in the singular for both Genders, but to make them Feminines in the plurall, the *o* of the last syllable, must be changed into *a*, and say *nosótras* and *vosótras*, instead of *nosótro* and *vosótro*.

Note that *tu* is taken for a Pronoun possessiue, being put with the Substantiue, as also *mi* and *su*, all which three are in the plurall *mis*, *tus*, *sus*, being declined by articles, and cases which make the same that *mío*, *tuyo*, *suyo*, and are taken for them, but they be rather Demonstratiues then Relatiues, and they are alwaies ioyned to their Substantiues: Whereof examples shall be giuen when we speake of the Possessives.

Although there be found in the plurall *nos* and *nosótro*, *vos* and *vosótro*, notwithstanding they may not indifferently be vsed, for *nos* is seldome applied but by greatnesse, or dignity in the Nominatiue; as, *Nos Don Iuán por la gracia de Dios Rey*, &c. And in the Accusatiue in composition after the Verbe: but *nosótro* and *vosótro* are more properly vsed in the first case; and they are alwaies vnderstood of more persons then one, which is not of *nos* and *vos*, without licence, as, *nosótro entrámos en Roma el día de san Iuán, y vosótro ya auíades salido*; We came into Rome on Saint Iohns day, and ye were already gone forth. *Vos* is said in the first and other cases to one person only in stead of *tu*, which would be a terme too abiect, and themselves would not bee well contented with *vos*, esteeming it also base, as if we should say

say *Thou* in English, so well as by abuse and affectation the Spaniards vse almost euery where *vuestra merced*; and in the oblique cases in composition with the Verbe, they put *os* in place of *vos*. As, *yo os digo*, I tell you, *yo yré mañana á visitáros*, I will goe to morrow to visit you: but with the Preposition it becometh to say *vos* and not *os*; as *de vos yo digo náda*, of you I say nothing; *muero por vos*, I die for you.

It is requisite to say how that the Spaniards oftentimes contrue the Article of the third person, with these Pronounes, *nosótro* and *vosótro* in the plurall: as *nosótro los Christianos*; we Christians: *vos los que amáys*, you that loue: *vosótro los Philosophos de Cupido*, you Philosophers of Cupid: and likewise with the Verbe of the first or second person, as *Oy'd pús amigos (los que lo fuéredes) el mas extraño Succeso*; Heare now ô friends (they that shall be so) the most strange successe, in stead of saying, you that shall be so.

### The declining of the Pronoun of the third person.

This Pronoun hath not the Nominatiue case, as the two others precedent, but it followeth the Latine, and serueth to both the singular and plurall number, in this manner.

Gen.	<i>De sí</i> , Of him, or her selfe.
Dat.	<i>à sí</i> , To himselfe.
Accus.	<i>se, &amp; por sí</i> , Himselfe, and by himselfe.
Ablat.	<i>de sí, &amp; para sí</i> , From himselfe, and for himselfe.

We must not forget to say that the Genitiue cases of all these three Pronounes are in a manner superfluous:

<i>à vos, à vosotros.</i>	to you.
<i>vos, vosotros, or por vosotros,</i>	you or by you.
<i>o vos, o vosotros,</i>	o yee, or you.
<i>de vos, de vosotros,</i>	from you.

These two serue in the singular for both Genders, but to make them Feminines in the plurall, the *o* of the last syllable, must be changed into *a*, and say *nosótras* and *vosótras*, in stead of *nosótro*s and *vosótro*s.

Note that *tu* is taken for a Pronoun possessiue, being put with the Substantiue, as also *mi* and *su*, all which three are in the plurall *mis*, *tus*, *sus*, being declined by articles, and cases which make the same that *mío*, *tuyo*, *suyo*, and are taken for them, but they be rather Demonstratiues then Relatiues, and they are alwaies ioyned to their Substantiues: Whereof examples shall be giuen when we speake of the Possessiues.

Although there be found in the plurall *nos* and *nosótro*s, *vos* and *vosótro*s, notwithstanding they may not indifferently be vsed, for *nos* is seldome applied but by greatnesse, or dignity in the Nominatiue; as, *Nos Don Iuán por la gracia de Dios Rey*, &c. And in the Accusatiue in composition after the Verbe: but *nosótro*s and *vosótro*s are more properly vsed in the first case; and they are alwaies vnderstood of more persons then one, which is not of *nos* and *vos*, without licence, as, *nosótro*s *entrámos en Róma el día de san Iuán, y vosótro*s *ya auíades salido*; We came into Rome on Saint Iohns day, and ye were already gone forth. *Vos* is said in the first and other cases to one person only in stead of *tu*, which would be a terme too abiect, and themselves would not bee well contented with *vos*, esteeming it also base, as if we should say

say *Thou* in English, so well as by abuse and affectation on the Spaniards vse almost euery where *vuestra merced*; and in the oblique cases in composition with the Verbe, they put *os* in place of *vos*. As, *yo os digo*, I tell you, *yo yré mañana á visitáros*, I will goe to morrow to visit you: but with the Preposition it be- houeth to say *vos* and not *os*; as *de vos yo digo náda*, of you I say nothing; *muéropor vos*, I die for you.

It is requisite to say how that the Spaniards ofentimes construe the Article of the third person, with these Pronounes, *nosótro*s and *vosótro*s in the plurall: as *nosótro*s *los Christianos*; we Christians: *vos los que amáis*, you that loue: *vosótro*s *los Philosophos de Cupido*, you Philosophers of Cupid: and likewise with the Verbe of the first or second person, as *Oyd pues amigos ( los qué lo fuéredes ) el mas extraño Suceso*; Heare now ô friends ( they that shall be so ) the most strange successe, in stead of saying, you that shall be so.

### The declining of the Pronoun of the third person.

This Pronoun hath not the Nominatiue case, as the two others precedent, but it followeth the Latine, and serueth to both the singular and plurall number, in this manner.

Gen.	<i>De sí</i> , Of him, or her selfe.
Dat.	<i>à sí</i> , To him selfe.
Accus.	<i>se, &amp; por sí</i> , Himselfe, and by himselfe.
Ablat.	<i>de sí, &amp; para sí</i> , From himselfe, and for himselfe.

We must not forget to say that the Genitiue cases of all these three Pronounes are in a manner superfluous:

perfluous: for desiring to use them possessiue, they shall say in place of the first, *mío*, in place of the second *tuyo*, and for the third *suyo*; and they serue only after the Verbe, seeming rather to be in the Ablatiue, then in the Genitiue; as,

*Quéserá de mi?* What will become of me?

*Que se dirá de ti?* What will be said of thee?

*El habla de si:* He speaketh of himselfe.

Where it appeareth that they may not be taken in the Genitiue, for one shall not say, *El libro es de mi*, *el canállo es de ti*, *el sayo es de si*: but, *el libro es mío*, *el canállo es tuyo*, *el sayo es suyo*. Yet neuertheless they may say interrogatiue, *De quien es ésta obra?* but cannot properly answer, *de mi*, but *mía*, without the Pronoun, and speaking of some other they shall say, *de Pedro*, *de Bóscan*.

In the comparing of *mismo*, they shall be used in all the cases, bee it either possessiue, reciprocally, or by forme of Demonstratiue and Relatiue, for it well may be said, *de mi mismo es el libro*, the booke is my owne, *de ti mismo el sayo*, the coat is thy owne, *de si mismo es*, It is his owne.

*It is declined as followeth.*

	Sing.	Plur. 1. Person.
Nom.	<i>Yo mismo,</i>	<i>Nosotros mismos.</i>
Gen.	<i>de mi mismo,</i>	<i>de nosotros mismos.</i>
Dat.	<i>a mi mismo,</i>	<i>a nosotros mismos.</i>
Accus.	<i>mi mismo,</i>	<i>nosotros mismos.</i>
Ablat.	<i>de mi mismo,</i>	<i>de nosotros mismos.</i>

	Sing.	Plur. 2. person.
Nom.	<i>Tu mismo,</i>	<i>Vosotros mismos.</i>
Gen.	<i>de ti mismo,</i>	<i>de vosotros mismos.</i>
		Dat.

Dat.	<i>a ti mismo,</i>	<i>a vosotros mismos.</i>
Accus.	<i>ti mismo,</i>	<i>vosotros mismos.</i>
Vocat.	<i>o tu mismo,</i>	<i>o vosotros mismos.</i>
Ablat.	<i>de ti mismo,</i>	<i>de vosotros mismos.</i>

Sing. Plur. 3. person.

Nom.	<i>El mismo,</i>	<i>Ellos mismos.</i>
Gen.	<i>de si mismo,</i>	<i>de si mismos.</i>
Dat.	<i>a si mismo,</i>	<i>a si mismos.</i>
Accus.	<i>si mismo,</i>	<i>si mismos.</i>
Ablat.	<i>de si mismo,</i>	<i>de si mismos.</i>

I haue here ioyned the first case to the third person, although *Miranda* hath omitted it in his Grammar. But it is to be vnderstood that *el* being an Article, and *el* the Pronoun Relatiue, haue a different signification; the one signifying in English, The; and the other, He: so that the plurall of the former maketh *los*, and the latter *ellos*; likewise the said *el* alone separated from *mismo*, shall bee declined throughout all the cases: to wit, *El*, *d'el*, *a el*, *el*, *d'el*. *Ellos*, *d'ellos*, *a ellos*, *ellos*, *d'ellos*, as hereafter shall be seene, and not *El*, *de si*, *a si*: for but in composition it hath not the Nominatiue case. To forme the feminine thereof it is but changing the *o* into *a*, and *misma* for *mismo*, and in the plurall *mismas* for *mismos*. The Spaniards oftentimes in stead of *mismo* and *misma*, use these words, *proprio* and *propria*, as *yo proprio*, *tu proprio*, *de si proprio*, *el proprio*, *ella propria*, adioyning thereunto an *s* in the plurall.

*Of the Pronounes Possessives, deriued of the precedent.*

These Pronounes possessiues that follow are *mío*, *tuyo*, *suyo*, *nuéstro*, *vuestro*, and their feminines, *mía*, *tuya*, *suya*,



*tuya, suya, nuestra, vuestra*; they haue also the Neuter Gender, ioyning the Article *lo* vnto them: but immediatly before the Substantiue, in stead of *mío, tuyo, suyo*, and of *mía, tuya, suya*, we must say *mi, tu, su*, and in the plurall *mis, tus, sus*, seruing both to the Masculine and Feminine. Example, *mi padre escriuió a tu amo por lo que toca a los negocios de su casa*: my father hath written to thy master concerning the affaires of his house.

I haue obserued a difficulty to arise in the receiuing of *su*, in the singular, and *sus* in the plurall, wherein almost all that read Spanish are deceiued, for that *su* signifieth, his, her, and their, singularly, and *sus* the same plurally, hauing either of them a double signification. But to know rightly how to vse them, both the possessor and the thing possessed must be considered; for if the possessor be one only, and the possession likewise single, it shall be meet to say *su*: Example, *El padre con su hijo*; the father with his sonne: *La madre con su hija*, the mother with her daughter: and if the thing possessed be in the plurall, they shall say *sus*, as, *La madre con sus hijas*, the mother with her daughters. But if the possessors be many, and the thing possessed one only, it will then be behouefull to vse *su*. Example, *Los soldados dénen de dar obediencia a su Capitán*; Souldiers ought to obey their Captaine: and if both the one and the other be in the plurall number, it will be requisite to apply *sus*, as, *yuan los hombres en compañía de sus mugeres*: The men went in company of their wiues.

The Spaniards put oftentimes *su*, in stead of the Article *el*, or *la*, which is a strange manner of speaking, to place the Relatiue before the Antecedent, which is it selfe expresse: as, *Ví que no tenía su firma*

*firma del autor*, for to say, I saw that it had not the Authors name, or signature.

I haue said that *mío, tuyo, suyo, nuestro, vuestro*, are found in the neuter Gender when they haue the Article *lo*, mediately or immediatly, and then they be put without Substantiues, for the Substantiue is supposed, and by the same reason we haue formerly said, speaking of Nounes neuters, where the Article *lo* signifieth, that which: for in saying *lo mío*, mine, they vnderstand that which is mine, and so of the rest.

The same shall be vnderstood although the Article *lo* be not thereto adioyned, but hauing with them a Pronoun neuter, as are *ésto, éssó*, of which we will speake hereafter: Yet notwithstanding we will here set downe an example of the same: that is,

*No quiero perder lo mío*, I will not lose mine owne.

*Cuyo es ésto, mío o tuyo?* whose is this, mine or thine?

*De quien es éssó? suyo es*: whose is that? It is his.

As touching their declining, there is no difficulty at all: for they differ in nothing from that of the Nounes, being made by the Article, as followeth:

Nom.	<i>El mío, la mía, lo mío,</i>	Mine.
Gen.	<i>Del tuyo, de la tuya, de lo tuyo,</i>	Of thine.
Dat.	<i>Al suyo, a la suya, a lo suyo,</i>	To his, to hers.
Accus.	<i>El nuestro, la nuestra, lo nuestro.</i>	Ours.
Ablat.	<i>Del nuestro, de la nuestra, de lo nuestro,</i>	From ours.

And each of them is declined by it selfe throughout the cases.

I haue formerly touched that Pronoun *cuyo*, whereof I will heere declare the signification. It now behoueth to know that it is both an Interrogatiue, and Relatiue, and hath his feminine *cuya*: in the plurall



plurall number they make *cúyos* and *cúyas*, and haue either of them feuerally these ensuing significations; whose, (for so it is most commonly Englished) of whom, whereof, of which: but it behoueth the learner to be carefull that he be not therein deceiued, taking the one for the other: wherefore let him diligently obserue the Spanish language, and the thing possessed, wherunto *cúyo*, *cúya*, *cúyos*, *cúyas* do accord, being contrary to the French which regardeth the possessor, as doth also sometimes the English, which shall appeare by these examples following.

### First of the Interrogative.

*Cúyo es este cauállo?*

Whose horse is this?

*Cúya es éssa casa?*

Whose house is that?

*Cúyos son éssos guantes?*

Whose gloves are those?

*Cúyas son éssas camisas?*

Whose shirts be those?

Where we see that all of them, being put interrogatiuely, are in English but only, whose.

### Of the Relative.

*He aquí una vírgen concebirá y parirá a un hijo, cuyo nómbre será Iesu.*

See here a Virgin shall conceiue and bring forth a sonne, whose name shall be Iesu.

*Sigámos a nuestro Saluador y Redentór, cuya muérte tan afrentósa, fué nuestra vida.*

Let vs follow our Saviour and Redemer, whose death, or the death of whom, so reproachfull, was our life.

*Leámos a Cicerón, cuyos libros están llenos de senténcias.*

Let vs reade Cicero; whose bookes are full of sentences.

*Oygámos*

Let

*Oygámos al Apóstol, cuyas palábras son las que se siguen.*

Let vs heare the Apostle, whose words are those that follow.

*Imitémos a los Santos de Dios cuyo número es infinito.*

Let vs imitate the Saints of God, the number whereof is infinite.

*Considerémos a los grandes Heroes, cuya fama es immortal.*

Let vs consider the great Heroes, whose renowne, or the renowne of whom is immortal.

*Veámos los antiguos Philosophos, cuyos dichos son tan memorables.*

Let vs looke on the ancient Philosophers, whose sayings are so memorable.

*Mirémos a los varones Ilústres, cuyas vidas escribe Plutarco.*

Let vs behold those Illustrious persons, whose liues Plutarch writeth.

*Escuchémos con atención la Sagrada Escritúra, cuyo testo nos enseña.*

Let vs hearken with attention to the Sacred Scripture, the text whereof doth teach vs.

*Meditémos la Ley de Dios santa, cuya interpretación, &c.*

Let vs meditate the holy Law of God, the interpretation of which, &c.

*Obedezcámos a la Iglesia, cuyos preceptos son cinco.*

Let vs obey the Church, the precepts whereof are five.

*Estudiémos Gramática, cuyas partes son ocho.*

Let vs study Grammar, the parts of which are eight.

*Las artes y sciencias, cuyo estudio, es muy enojoso a los negligétes y perezosos.*

The Arts and Sciences, the study whereof is very troublesome to the negligent and slothfull.

*Las matemáticas, cuya*

The Mathematicks, the

*perfección consiste en la práctica y exercicio.*

*Las naciones y tierras estrangeras, cuyos ritos y costumbres.*

*Las profundas y tempestuosas mares, cuyas navegaciones son tan peligrosas.*

In all which examples the Spanish is seene to correspond with the thing possessed without an Article, and the English in diuers of them to the possessor, ioyning the Article *the* to the thing possessed, or that is Relatiue.

I haue (in speaking of the Article *el*) made mention of the Spaniards fashion of speaking, when they apply the third person for the second, and it shall not be amisse to say heere also that for the same reason they vse *suyo*, for *vuestro*, and in stead of saying *vuestra merced*, which would be (as I haue said) too high a title for all sorts of people, and likewise *vuestro* would be taken in the degree of *vos*.

I will speake a word moreouer concerning the pronounciation of *vuestra merced*, which I haue written *vuestra merced*, treating of the Articles: but note that it little importeth whether it be written *vuestra* or *vuestra*, when it is put downe at large, although *vuestra* be more to the purpose; and as for pronouncing it, I haue heard some that haue said entirely *vuestra merced*, others *vuestra*, or *vueza merced*; some againe *vuestra mised*, but more briefe and more common *vosasted*, and for greater breuitie they many times say nothing

perfection of which consisteth in practise and exercise.

The stranger Nations and countries, whose rites and customes.

The profound and tempestuous seas, the navigations whereof are so dangerous.

nothing but *vostéd*. As for the writing of it, there will be no difficulty, for it is set downe by two letters only, which are *V. M.*

### *Of other Pronounes Demonstratiues.*

There be yet remaining these Pronounes Demonstratiues *éste*, *esse*, *aquel*, which signifie thus according to the Latine, *éste*, *hic* and *is*: *esse*, *ipse*: *aquel*, *ille*: in English, *éste* this, or this man; *esse* that, or that man; *aquel*, he, or he there. As for example.

<i>éste hombre,</i>	This man.
<i>essa muger,</i>	That woman.
<i>aquel muchacho,</i>	That young man.

But I will here discouer a difficulty, which is, that if *aquel* be put before his Substantiue, it shall not signifie, He, for to translate *aquel caballo*, it will not be good English to say, he horse, but being a Relatiue, or some other word interposed, it may well be said, as if I demand, *Quátes mi caballo? es aquel:* Which is my horse? It is he there. *Buen caballo es aquel:* He, or he there is a good horse.

To know rightly how to distinguish them, it is to be vnderstood that *éste* is said by a thing neere vnto me that speake; *esse*, by that which is neere the person to whom I speake or write (which is all one) and *Aquel* is taken for somewhat that is separated, and standeth apart both from the one and the other, as in a third place.

Some there be that forme a kinde compounded, which is not very much vsed of such as doe speake well, and it is *Aqueste* and *aquesse*, for *éste* and *esse*; and it should seeme to be the same reason of *aquel*, that should be formed a demonstratiue of *el*, which I haue touched in speaking of the Pronoun *mismo*.  
Theie

These Pronounes haue three genders, and numbers like the rest, onely they differ in their terminations, for the masculine of the two first endeth in *e*, which in the plurall is changed into *o*, and *s* thereto adioyned, as *éste*, *ése*, *éstos*, *essos*; the third endeth in *el*, which is *aquél*, and maketh in the plurall *aquéllas*: the feminine endeth in *a*, and the neuter in *o*; their declining which heere followeth, will make it apparent.

## SINGVLAR.

	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom.	<i>éste</i> ,	<i>ésta</i> ,	<i>ésto</i> .
Gen.	<i>de éste</i> , or <i>déste</i> ,	<i>de ésta</i> , or <i>désta</i> ,	<i>de esto</i> .
Dat.	<i>à éste</i> ,	<i>à ésta</i> ,	<i>à esto</i> .
Accus.	<i>éste</i> , or <i>à éste</i> ,	<i>ésta</i> or <i>à ésta</i> ,	<i>ésto</i> .
Ablat.	<i>de éste</i> , or <i>déste</i> ,	<i>de ésta</i> , or <i>désta</i> ,	<i>de esto</i> .

## PLVRALL.

	Masc.	Fem.
Nom.	<i>éstos</i> ,	<i>ésta</i> s.
Gen.	<i>de éstos</i> , or <i>déstos</i> ,	<i>de éstas</i> , or <i>déstas</i> .
Dat.	<i>à éstos</i> ,	<i>à éstas</i> .
Accus.	<i>éstos</i> , or <i>à éstos</i> ,	<i>éstas</i> , or <i>à éstas</i> .
Ablat.	<i>de éstos</i> , or <i>déstos</i> .	<i>de éstas</i> , or <i>déstas</i> .

## SINGVLAR.

	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom.	<i>ése</i> ,	<i>essa</i> ,	<i>esso</i> .
Gen.	<i>de esse</i> , or <i>dése</i> ,	<i>de éssa</i> , or <i>déssa</i> ,	<i>de esso</i> .
Dat.	<i>à esse</i> ,	<i>à éssa</i> ,	<i>à esso</i> .
Accus.	<i>ése</i> , or <i>à esse</i> ,	<i>éssa</i> , or <i>à éssa</i> ,	<i>esso</i> .
Ablat.	<i>de esse</i> , or <i>dése</i> ,	<i>de éssa</i> , or <i>déssa</i> .	<i>de esso</i> .

PLV-

## PLVRALL.

	Masc.	Fem.
Nom.	<i>essos</i> ,	<i>éssas</i> .
Gen.	<i>de éssos</i> , or <i>déssos</i> ,	<i>de éssas</i> , or <i>déssas</i> .
Dat.	<i>à éssos</i> ,	<i>à éssas</i> .
Accus.	<i>éssos</i> , <i>à éssos</i> ,	<i>éssas</i> , <i>à éssas</i> .
Ablat.	<i>de éssos</i> , or <i>déssos</i> ,	<i>de éssas</i> , or <i>déssas</i> .

## SINGVLAR.

	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom.	<i>aquél</i> ,	<i>aquélla</i> ,	<i>aquéllo</i> .
Gen.	<i>de aquél</i> ,	<i>de aquélla</i> ,	<i>de aquéllo</i> .
Dat.	<i>à aquél</i> ,	<i>à aquélla</i> ,	<i>à aquéllo</i> .
Accus.	<i>aquél</i> ,	<i>aquélla</i> ,	<i>aquéllo</i> .
Ablat.	<i>de aquél</i> ,	<i>de aquélla</i> ,	<i>de aquéllo</i> .

## PLVRALL.

	Masc.	Fem.
Nom.	<i>aquéllas</i> ,	<i>aquéllas</i> .
Gen.	<i>de aquéllos</i> ,	<i>de aquéllas</i> .
Dat.	<i>à aquéllos</i> ,	<i>à aquéllas</i> .
Accus.	<i>aquéllas</i> ,	<i>aquéllas</i> .
Ablat.	<i>de aquéllos</i> ,	<i>de aquéllas</i> .

It will be requisite to set downe in this place the declining of *el*, Relatiue, and Demonstratiue, as being almost of the nature of *aquél*.

## SINGVLAR.

	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom.	<i>el</i> ,	<i>élla</i> ,	<i>ello</i> .
Gen.	<i>de el</i> , or <i>del</i> ,	<i>de élla</i> , or <i>délla</i> ,	<i>de ello</i> .
Dat.			

Dat.	à el,	à élla,	à éllo.
Accuf.	el, or à el,	élla, or à élla,	éllo.
Ablat.	de el, or dél,	de élla or délla,	de éllo.

## PLVRALL.

Masc.

Fem.

Nom.	ellos,	éllas.
Gen.	de ellos, or déllas,	de éllas, or déllas.
Dat.	à ellos,	à éllas.
Accuf.	ellos, or à ellos,	éllas, or à éllas.
Ablat.	de ellos, or déllas,	de éllas, or déllas.

The neuters haue not the plurall, as is said in the Nounes, so that they are not ioyned to any Substantiues, but seeme to be Substantiues themselues; for *ésto*, *éssó*, *aquéllo*, *éllo*, signifie *this* and *that*, which specify nothing, but will say, this thing here, and that thing there; such as it is, without naming the Substantiue: for it would be improperly spoken to say, *ésto hombre*, or *aquéllo canállo*. But one may well say *ésto*, in shewing some booke which hee hath in his hand, or lying neere him, and likewise *aquéllo*, pointing to a stone or other thing somewhat farther distant, but it shall bee alwaies without expressing the Substantiue.

The signification of *el*, not being an article, is in English *Hee*, in the Nominatiue; *élla* signifieth *she*, *éllo* like *aquéllo*, which is as much as to say, *That*. Example.

*El venia por una parte y élla por otra, y juntándose los dos tomola por la mano, y se fuéron de*

He came one way and she another, and both meeting together, he tooke her by the hand, and they went one

*de compañía. Y el de camino, le yua contando sus infortunios, y lo que auia sufrido por su amor: pero élla bien mostraua à su gesto, y se echaua de ver en su rostro, que no se le dána náda por éllo.*

one in the companie of the other. He by the way declared to her his misfortunes, & what he had suffered for her loue: but she well shewed by her gesture, & it appeared also by her countenance, not to be troubled for that, or thereat.

That word *ótro* morcouer is very often annexed, and to good purpose, to these three Pronounes, and in all the three genders, that is, *ótro* for the masculine and neuter, and *ótra* for the feminine. Example: *Estótro día vino un hombre acá, el qual me dió nuevas de v.m.* The other day there came a man hither, who gaue, or told me newes of you. *Essótra casa es muy linda*; That other house there is a very neat one. *Essótro que v.m. dize, no me parece ser muy verdadero*; That other thing you tell me, seemeth not to me to be very true.

There are yet two Pronounes, that haue only the plurall number, which be *ámbos* and *entrámbos*, for the masculine; *ámbas* and *entrámbas*, for the feminine, which are also ioyned with *dos*, making *ámbos á dos*; and they signifie in English, both, or both together. In like sort is *juntos* sometimes annexed, which is also interpreted, together. Example.

*Si entrámbos queréis venir, yo os daré entrámbas mis hijas, y sino venís ámbos á dos, no os las daré, y per*

If yee will come both, I will giue you both my daughters, and if you doe not come both together, I will not giue you them, and therefore I speake to you

por éssó digo que ven- you to come both together,  
gáis ámbos juntos, which will be the better for  
que será mejor para both of you.  
entrámbos.

### Of the Pronounes Relatiues.

There be three other Pronounes Relatiues, to wit, *quien*, *qué*, *qual*, the first whereof signifieth, who, and is both Relatiue and Interrogatiue. Example, *Quién dize ésto?* who saith this? *No áy quien lo hága*; there is not any person that doth it. *Qué* is likewise an Interrogatiue and Relatiue, and signifieth in English, what, being put interrogatiuely, whose pronuntiation hath before beene spoken of, and therefore shall not need to be here repeated. Example: *que es éssó?* what is that there? *De que habla v. m?* Of what doe you speake? *Que es lo que yo véo?* What is that which I see? As it is a Relatiue, it signifieth, which, and that; as for example: *El hombre que yo digo, es el que estáua cerca de mí*; The man which I say, or meane, is he that stood neere vnto me. *Que* is sometimes taken for *qual*; as, *que hombre es aquél?* what man is he there? or, what man is that there? The third is *Qual*, which differeth but little from *que*, and is likewise englished, what, being an Interrogatiue, as the rest. Example: *qual hombre, ó qual mugér puede padecer ésto?* what man, or what woman can suffer this? The Spaniards vse often these two particles *que tal* in place of *qual*; and so in like manner *que tan* for *quán*, and *que tanto* in stead of *quánto*. *El qual*, *la qual*, and *lo qual*, are compounded, and in English signifie in all the three genders, which, or, the which; yet the two first are many times interpreted, who, according to that

that which they haue relation to. They are declined with the article as the other Pronounes, only *quien*, and *que* want it in the nominatiue case. As for their genders, *quien* serueth to the masculine, and *que* and *qual* to all.

*Their declining: and first of quien, qué, and qual simple.*

#### Singular.

Nom.	<i>Quien, que, qual.</i>
Gen.	<i>de quien, de que, de qual.</i>
Dat.	<i>á quien, á que, á qual.</i>
Accus.	<i>quien, or á quien, que, qual, or a qual.</i>
Ablat.	<i>de quien, de que, de qual.</i>

#### Plurall.

Nom.	<i>Quienes, quáles.</i>
Gen.	<i>de quienes, de quáles.</i>
Dat.	<i>á quienes, á quáles.</i>
Accus.	<i>quienes, or á quienes, quáles, or á quáles.</i>
Ablat.	<i>de quienes, de quáles.</i>

*Que* hath not the plurall, and *quienes* signifieth in English no more then the singular. Example; *quien es aquél hombre?* who is that man there? *quienes son aquéllos?* who be those there?

*The declining of El qual, la qual, and lo qual.*

#### SINGULAR.

	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom.	<i>El qual,</i>	<i>la qual,</i>	<i>lo qual.</i>
Gen.	<i>del qual,</i>	<i>de la qual,</i>	<i>de lo qual.</i>
			Dat.

Dat.	al qual,	à la qual,	à lo qual.
Accus.	el qual, or al qual.	la qual, or à la qual.	lo qual.
Ablat.	del qual.	de la qual.	de lo qual.

## PLURAL.

Masc.	Fem.
Nō. Los quáles,	Las quáles.
Gen. de los quáles,	de las quáles.
Dat. à los quáles,	à las quáles.
Acc. los quáles, or à los quáles.	las quáles, or à las quáles.
Abl. de los quáles.	de las quáles.

## An example of their significations.

*Allí estava un hombre, el qual nos dixo muchas cosas, entre las quáles nos contó una historia, la qual otras vezes yo avia leydo, tambien nos mostró cosas maravillosas pintadas en su Palacio, y allende desto tenía en una recámara, muchos lindos y muy ricos atavíos, todo lo qual nos causó muy grande admiración, y dello quedamos muy espantados, pero todo era hecho por encantamiento, y arte mágica, lo qual se vió claramente después que salimos fuera de allí, porque todo desapareció en un punto.*

There was a man, who told vs many things, amongst which he recounted vnto vs a historie, the which I had other times read; he likewise shewed vs wonderfull things pictured in his Palace, and beside this, he had in a wardrop, much faire and very rich apparell, all which caused in vs great admiration, and wee remained very much astonished therewith: but all was done by inchantment and Art Magicke, the  
which

which was plainly perceiued after wee went forth from thence, for all vanished in a moment.

This word *quiera* (which without composition should be a Verbe) is very properly put in composition with *quien* and *qual*, as *quienquiera*, whosoever, *qualquiera*, what one soever, and in the plurall of *qual*, *qualesquiera*, but *quienquiera* wanteth it. There is also found (yet rarely) *quequiera*, as in this pro- uerbe, *Quequiera que digan las gentes, à ti mismo para mientes*: Whatsoever the people say, looke to thy selfe: or *quiquiera*, which should be compounded of *que* and *quiera*, but in the stead thereof they vse *qualquiera cosa*, what thing soever, or, any thing; as, *qualquiera cosa que sea*, what thing soever it be: *yo me contento con qualquiera cosa*, I am content with any thing. They are sometimes abridged by taking away the last *a*, and it is said *quienquier*, and *qualquier*, but I finde that this is in construction, when they goe before other words: the abbreviation is more frequently made in *qualquiera*, for that it is construed with the Substantive.

There be also other parts of speech which are compounded with *quiera*, whereof shall be spoken in time and place conuenient.

Of the Reciprocals *me*, *te*, *se*.

It remaineth to speake a word of these three Pronounes Reciprocals *me*, *te*, *se*, which are of the Accusative case, seruing sometimes to the Dative, when they precede a Verbe that requireth it, and of which soever it be, they are alwayes put with the Verbe either before or after. Example: *Dime lo que quisieres, y hazer te he cosa de que no gústes mucho*: Tell mee  
E what

what thou wilt, and I will doe a thing to thee, that shall not much content thee. *No me maltrátes así,* Doe not misuse me so. *El se va,* He goeth. *Quéxa se mucho el hombre,* The man complaineth much.

The Spaniards vse *se* in the Dative, when they would say, him, or to him, which should seeme to be *le*, but the said *le* is not a Reciprocall, but a Relatiue, as I haue said in the chapter of the Articles, and would as well be an Accusatiue as a Dative, as *Dile, lláma le*: and they say, *yo se lo diré, yo se lo daré, yo se lo embiaré*; which is as much as to say, I will tell him, I will giue him, I will send to him: but it behoueth to vnderstand the thing which might be expresse, in adioyning thereto, *it*. Example.

*To se lo daré muy bueno*: I will giue it him very good.

*To se la embiaré como es*: I will send it to him as it is.

*To se lo dixé desta manera*: I told it him in this manner.

And note that the said *it*, may sometimes be Englished, *so*, hauing relation to what was before spoken: as,

*Quiere decirse lo v.m?* Will you tell him so?

*Si, yo se lo diré*: Yes, I will tell him so.

There is yet another placing of *se*, with *me*, *te*, and *le*, and also of *me* with *te*: As for example;

*No se me da nada*: Nothing is giuen mee, *id est*, I care not.

*Déne algo para Pásqua, y hazérse te ha corta la Quarésma*: Haue a debt to pay against Easter, and Lent will seeme short to thee, *i. will be made thee short*.

*No se le cueze el pan*: The bread is not sodden him:

him: which is, He is not at his ease; or, He is in haste.

*Quién eres tu que te me vèndes por discreto?* Who art thou which thinkest to make me beleue that thou art a sufficient man? *Verbatim*; Who art thou that sellest me thy selfe for a discreet person?

*O mi Señor, y adónde os me lleuan?* O my Lord, and whither doe they carry me you? for, carry you.

I might yet alleadge many other examples, but the studious shall easily obserue them in their readings: wherefore hauing (as I thinke) sufficiently spoken of the Pronounes, it behoueth to come vnto the Verbes.

### *Of the Verbe.*

**T**He Verbe is a part of Speech which signifieth action and passion, whereof they are called Verbes Actiues and Passiues: The Latines haue also of other kindes, but vulgar Languages know but thesetwo only. As touching the coniugation, there is yet but the Actiue that is varied, for so much as the Passiue hath but one only forme or voice, being serued of the Verbe Substantiue *soy*, for his variation in all the Tenses, Persons and Moods. It then requireth to speake only of the Actiue, which can neither be wholly coniugated without the aid of an Auxiliar Verbe, which is *habeo* in Latine, and in Spanish is said *hauer* in the Infinitiue Mood, seruing to the Perfect, and Pluperfect Tenses, and somewhat to the Futures, as shall be seene by the examples. It will be fitting first to coniugate the said *hauer*, because it serueth to the others; yet before we come to the variations, it shall be requisite to put downe how many



Coniugations there be in the Spanish tongue, and to declare in like sort the Moods, the Tenses, and the Persons, which are parts appertaining to the Verbe.

There be then three sorts of Coniugations in regard of the Infinitive, the first ending in *ár*, the second in *ér*, and the third in *ír* : but in respect of the second persons present of the Indicative, there should be but two, that is, in *as*, and *es*, in the singular number : notwithstanding for the greater facilitie we will make them three ; of all which it beloueth to set downe some Verbes, that their difference may be knowne.

The Moods are five as in Latine, to wit, the Indicative, otherwise Demonstrative: Imperative or commanding : Optative, called desiderative or wishing : Coniunctive or Subiunctive : and lastly, the Infinitive.

The Tenses are three in the first denomination, that is to say, present, past, and future : and the Tense or Time past being diuided into three, Imperfect, Perfect, and Pluperfect, they should be five : but in vulgar Tongues there is yet a subdiuision of the Perfect, into a defined, and vndefined, otherwise determined and absolute, (which I will call the first, and second) so that they make six in the whole : Present, Imperfect, 1 Perfect, 2 Perfect, Pluperfect, and Future.

The Persons be three : the first, he that speaketh ; the second, to whom they speake ; and the third, of whom it is spoken.

The Numbers are, Singular and Plurall.

Yet crewe come to the Coniugations which will shew vs the Moods, Tenses, Persons, Numbers, and the signification all together, for so much as they comprehend

prehend it al; it wil be good to set down some Infinitives of all the three sorts, to shew their terminations.

The first shall be of those in *ar*, as

*Amár*, to loue.  
*Buscar*, to seeke.  
*Caminár*, to trauell.  
*Dár*, to giue.  
*Estár*, to be.  
*Faxár*, to binde.  
*Gastár*, to spend.  
*Holgár*, to be glad.  
*Inuentár*, to inuent.  
*Jugar*, to play.  
*Llamár*, to call.  
*Lauár*, to wash.  
*Matár*, to kill.  
*Nadár*, to swim.  
*Oluidár*, to forget.  
*Peleár*, to fight.  
*Quebrár*, to breake.  
*Robár*, to steale.  
*Sacár*, to pull out.  
*Tomár*, to take.  
*Vaziár*, to emptie.  
*Xaropár*, to medicine.

The second in *er*, as

*Sabér*, to know.  
*Tañér*, to play vpon an Instrument.  
*Vér*, to see.  
*Aprender*, to learne.  
*Beuér*, to drinke.  
*Correr*, to run.



*Deuér*, to owe.  
*Escoger*, to chuse.  
*Fenescér*, to end.  
*Guaresecér*, to heale.  
*Hazér*, to doe or make.  
*Impelér*, to constrain.  
*Leér*, to reade.  
*Llouér*, to raine.  
*Mouér*, to moue.  
*Nascér*, to be borne.  
*Ofrecér*, to offer.  
*Padecér*, to suffer.  
*Querér*, to be willing.  
*Raér*, to shauē.

Those of the third are in *ir*, as

*Abrir*, to open.  
*Biuir*, to liue.  
*Cubrir*, to couer.  
*Dezir*, to say.  
*Eligir*, to chuse.  
*Fingir*, to faine.  
*Gemir*, to mourne.  
*Herir*, to strike.  
*Instruir*, to instruct.  
*Luzir*, to shine.  
*Medir*, to measure.  
*Oyr*, to heare.  
*Parir*, to bring forth.  
*Reyr*, to laugh.  
*Subir*, to goe vp.  
*Tenir*, to die.  
*Venir*, to come.  
*Vnir*, to vnite, or ioyne.

And

And for so much as the greatest difficulty in any Language, consisteth in the knowledge and true vnderstanding of the Verbes, I will not binde my selfe to set them downe or the Tenses, directly as they are by the Author, which would cause confusion, for that diuers of them serue onely to expresse the Tenses of the French tongue; but I will be carefull so to dispose and order them, that they may be commodious and profitable for the English, whose good did most of all moue me to vndertake this Grammar.

Know therefore that the Optatiue and Subiunctiue Moode are almost alike, being onely distinguished by certaine formes and dictions annexed vnto them: all which, or at leastwise the greater part, I will here set downe with their signification, as being necessary to be knowne before wee come to the Verbes; and first those that belong to the Optatiue: as,

*óxala*,

God Grant, or would to God.

*Pléga à Diós que,*

I pray God that.

*Quiéra à Diós que,*

God grant that.

*Pluguiéssé à Diós que,*

Would to God that.

*Plaguiéra à Diós que,*

And so likewise signifye the other two.

*Osi,*

Those seruing to the Subiunctiue, be these.

*Cómo* or *Quándo*, *Si*,

When, If.

*Aunque*, *dádoque*,

Although, Although that.

*Cómo quiéra que,*

Howsoeuer that.

*Puésto que,*

Say that, or put case that.

*Bien que,*

Albeit.

E 4

This

This now sufficiently knowne, and the difference so little betwene the Optative and Subiunctive, as is said, I shall not neede to separate them, but will coniugate them both together, only putting the formes of dictions belonging to the Optative Moode, at the side of the Tenses, and those appertaining to the Subiunctive, at the top, or beginning thereof, thereby the better to distinguish them: For by this meanes the Reader shall instantly perceiue, which Tense is of the Optative, which of the Subiunctive, and which of both; where otherwise (as *Oudin* himselfe hath put them) it would in my opinion seeme somewhat difficult to the Learner. And that the studious may not be wearied with the discourses which should be necessary to repeat in euery variation, I will declare the better part of them in the coniugating of these two Verbes, *Hauer*, and *Tener*, which shall accompany one another, for that they be Englished alike; yet their difference concerning vse, I purpose to explicate at the end of their declining, which is as followeth.

*The Indicative Mood present Tense.*

Singular.		
<i>Yo hê,</i>	<i>Téngo,</i>	I haue.
<i>Tu hás,</i>	<i>Tiénes,</i>	Thou hast.
<i>Aquêl ha,</i>	<i>Tiéne,</i>	He hath.
Plurall.		
<i>Nosôtros hémos</i> or <i>hauémos,</i>	<i>Tenémos,</i>	We haue.
<i>Vosôtros héys</i> or <i>hauéys,</i>	<i>Tenéys,</i>	Ye haue.
<i>Aquêllos hán,</i>	<i>Tiénen,</i>	They haue.

*The*

*The Imperfect Tense.*

Singular.		
<i>Yo haúa, or auía,</i>	<i>Tenía,</i>	I had.
<i>Tu auías,</i>	<i>Tenías,</i>	Thou hadst.
<i>El haúa,</i>	<i>Tenia,</i>	He had.

Plurall.		
<i>Nosôtros hauíamos,</i>	<i>Teníamos,</i>	We had.
<i>Vosôtros hauíades,</i>	<i>Teníades,</i>	Ye had.
<i>ellos haúan,</i>	<i>Tenían,</i>	They had.

*The first Perfect.*

Singular.		
<i>Yo uíe or híue,</i>	<i>Tíue,</i>	I had, or haue had.
<i>Tu uístes, or ouístes,</i>	<i>Tuístes,</i>	Thou hadst, or hast had.
<i>El uío, or óuo,</i>	<i>Tíuo,</i>	He had, or hath had.

Plurall.		
<i>Nosôtros uímos,</i>	<i>Tuúimos,</i>	We had, or haue had.
<i>Vosôtros uístes,</i>	<i>Tuístes,</i>	Ye had, or haue had.
<i>Aquêllos uiéron,</i>	<i>Tuuiéron,</i>	They had, or haue had.

*The second Perfect.*

Singular.		
<i>Yo hé auído,</i>	<i>Tenído,</i>	I haue had.
<i>Tu hás auído,</i>	<i>Tenído,</i>	Thou hast had.
<i>El há auído,</i>	<i>Tenído,</i>	He hath had.

Plurall.		
<i>Nosôtros hémos, &amp; hauémos auído,</i>	<i>Tenído,</i>	We haue had.
<i>Vosôtros hauéys auído,</i>	<i>Tenído,</i>	Ye haue had.
<i>ellos hán auído,</i>	<i>Tenído,</i>	They haue had.

*The*

## The Pluperfect.

## Singular.

<i>Yo había auido,</i>	<i>Tenido,</i>	I had had.
<i>Tu auias, auido,</i>	<i>tenido,</i>	Thou hadst had.
<i>El auió auido,</i>	<i>tenido,</i>	He had had.

## Plurall.

<i>Nosotros auíamos auido,</i>	<i>Tenido,</i>	We had had.
<i>Vosotros auíades auido,</i>	<i>tenido,</i>	Ye had had.
<i>Aquellos auían auido,</i>	<i>tenido,</i>	They had had.

## The Future.

## Singular.

<i>Yo auré,</i>	<i>Terné &amp; tendré,</i>	I shall or will haue.
<i>Tu aurás,</i>	<i>Ternás &amp; tendrás,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt (haue.
<i>Aquel aurá,</i>	<i>Terná &amp; tendrá,</i>	He shall or will haue.

## Plurall.

<i>Nosotros a- urémós,</i>	<i>Ternémós &amp; ten- drémós,</i>	We shall or will haue.
<i>Vosotros a- uréys,</i>	<i>Ternéys &amp; ten- dréys,</i>	Ye shall or will haue.
<i>ellos aurán,</i>	<i>Ternán &amp; ten- drán.</i>	They shall or will haue.

It behoueth the Readers to be carefull that they be not deceiued in the pronounciation of this Future, *auré*, as many are, who in reading found it as if it were written *au-ré*, which is by all meanes to bee auoided, for they must separate the *a*, or *ha* when it is

is put with *h*, from *uré*, where the *u* is a consonant, and say *a-uré*.

The Spaniards haue another Future compounded of the Present tense of the Indicative and the Infinitive Mood of Verbes, as followeth:

## Second Future.

## Singular.

<i>Yo hé,</i>	<i>Téngo,</i>	<i>de haucr,</i>	{ I shall, will, must, or ought to haue.
<i>Tu há,</i>	<i>tiénes,</i>	<i>de haucr,</i>	{ Thou, shalt, wilt, must, or oughtest to haue.
<i>El há,</i>	<i>tiéne,</i>	<i>de haucr,</i>	{ He shall, will, must, or ought to haue.

## Plurall.

<i>Nos. hémos,</i>	<i>Tenémós,</i>	<i>de auér,</i>	{ We shall, will, must, or ought to haue.
<i>Vos. auéys,</i>	<i>tenéys,</i>	<i>de auér,</i>	{ Yee shall, will, must, or ought to haue.
<i>Ellos han,</i>	<i>tiénen,</i>	<i>de auér,</i>	{ They shal, wil, must, or ought to haue.

Some peraduenture might heere ground a scruple, for that I haue sometimes put downe the *h*, and sometimes omitted it; but I will answer them, that besides the said *h* not being a letter, I follow therein but the custome of the best Spanish Authors, in whose writings it is often found to escape.

## The Imperative Mood.

## Singular.

Haue tu,	Tent tu,	Haue thou.
áya aquel,	Tenga el,	Let him haue.

## Plurall.

Ayámos,	Tengámos nosótro,	Let vs haue.
Haned,	Tened vosótro,	Haue ye.
áyan,	Tengan aquéllos,	Let them haue.

## The Optative Mood Future Tense, and the Present of the Subiunctive.

Aunque, Dado que.      Although, Albeit.

## Singular.

Yo áya,	Tenga,	I haue.
Tu áyas,	Tengas,	Thou hast.
El áya,	Tenga,	He hath.

## Plurall.

Nosótro ayámos,	Tengámos,	We haue.
Vosótro ayáis,	Tengáis,	Ye haue.
Ellos áyan,	Tengan,	They haue.

I haue obserued that this Tense and the Preterperfect are sometimes vsed as for a Future, being of the Subiunctive Moode, by putting *cómo* before them, which in such wise placed, signifieth as much as *Quando*. Example: *Cómo yo lo tenga, yo se lo embiaré;* When

When I shall haue it, I will send it you. This Aduerbe *luégo* serueth there also, as, *Dixome que luégo que el lo áya acabádo de leer, se lo tornerà a embiar:* Hee told mee that so soone as euer hee shall haue read it, he will returne it you. *Cómo yo áya oydo áun dos palábras, yo me tengo de yr:* When yet I shall haue heard two words, I must be gone.

## Another Present of the Subiunctive like to the Indicative.

Puesque,

Seeing that.

## Singular.

To hé,	Tengo,	I haue.
Tu bás,	Tienes,	Thou hast.
Aquel há,	Tiene,	He hath, &c.

## The Imperfect of both.

Aunque, bienque,

Although, although that.

## Singular.

Yo uniesse uniera,	Tuniesse, tuniera, &c.	I had.
Tu uniesse,	Tuniesse,	Thou hadst.
El uniesse,	Tuniesse.	He had.

## Plurall.

Nosótro uniessemos,	Tuniessemos,	We had.
Vosótro uniesseades,	Tuniesseades,	Ye had.
Ellos uniesssen,	Tuniesssen.	they had.

Would to God that  
The

## The Perfect.

Aunque Puêsto que,

Albeit, Put case that.

## Singular.

óxala, Plêga à Dios que	Yo áya auído,	Tenído,	I haue had.
	Tu áyas auído,	Tenído,	Thou hast had.
	El áya auído,	Tenído,	He hath had.
		Plurall.	
	Nosótroz ayámos auído,	Tenído,	We haue had.
	Vosótroz ayáis auído,	Tenído,	Ye haue had.
	Ellos áyan auído,	Tenído,	they haue had.

There is yet found another Perfect Tense, which Oudin hath put in the Indicative : but by the reason it is neuer vsed without a Particle or Aduerbe of time before it, to wit, *Quando despuesque*, or *cómo* ; I haue thought it more properly to be placed in the Subiunctiue. And it is as followeth.

## The second Perfect.

Quando,

When.

	Singular.	
Yo úue auído,	Tenído,	I haue had.
Tu uíste auído,	Tenído,	Thou hast had.
Aquél úuo auído,	Tenído,	He hath had.
	Plurall.	
Nos. uúimos auído,	Tenído,	We haue had.
Vos. uúistes auído,	Tenído,	Ye haue had.
Aquéllos uuíeron auído,	Tenído,	They haue had.

The

## The Pluperfect.

Aunque Puêstoque,

Although, Say that.

## Singular.

Yo uuiéra,  
Tu uuiéras,  
Aquél uuiéra,

Tuuiéra,  
Tuuiéras,  
Tuuiéra,

I had had.  
thou hadst had  
He had had.

## Plurall.

Nosótroz uuiéramos, Tuuiéramos,  
Vosótroz uuiérades, Tuuiérades,  
Aquéllos uuiéran, Tuuiéran,

Wee had had.  
Yee had had.  
They had had

I will here giue the Reader to vnderstand, that this Tense by the Author himselfe was made a Pluperfect only ; but I hauing both read it, and many times heard it vsed by Spaniards themselues for an Imperfect, haue beene so bold as to make it so likewise : for if you looke before, you shall finde *Vuiéra* and *Tuuiéra* put downe with *Vuiéssé* and *Tuuiéssé*, where it is to be declined throughout all the persons ; and for prooffe hereof, I shall need no other example then this : *Yo le acompañára si tuuiéra cauállo*, I would accompany you if I had a horse ; where without all doubt *Tuuiéra* is an Imperfect Tense : but if one should say, *Yo le uuiéra acompañádo si tuuiéra cauállo*, I would haue gone with you if I had had a horse, no man can denie but that it is put for a Pluperfect. And the same is to be vnderstood by this Tense, in all Verbes whatsoever : yet lest the learner should be vnmindfull thereof, I haue in euery Verbe put the first person of the said Tense with the other Imperfect, as may be seene in the sequell.

Another

Another Pluperfect, with the Auxiliar Verbe.

Singular.

*Yo vniéſſe, & vniéra, auído, Tenido.* In English  
*Tu vniéſſes, & vniéra, auído, Tenido.* as in the for-  
*El vniéſſe & vniéra, auído, Tenido.* mer Pluper-  
 feſt, and with  
 the ſame ſignes. Notwithſtanding there may be ad-  
 ded, I would or ſhould haue had, &c.

Plurall.

*Nosótroſ vniéſſemos & vniéramoſ, auído, Tenido.*  
*Vosótroſ vniéſſedes & vniérades, auído, Tenido.*  
*Elloſ vniéſſen & vniéran, auído, Tenido.*

There is yet another kind of variation which cannot be applied to any certaine Tenſe, but is vſed in the Optatiue, with *De buena gana*, which ſignifieth willingly : and in the Subiunctiue, hauing a precedent Verbe, with the particle *ſi*, or in asking a queſtion, and alſo hauing the Aduerbe *quando* before it. But let vs ſet downe the forme, and after we will giue examples hereof.

The uncertaine Tenſe.

Singular.

<i>Yo hauria,</i>	<i>Ternia &amp; tendria,</i>	I ſhould or would haue.
<i>Tu haurias,</i>	<i>Ternias &amp; tendrías,</i>	Thou ſhouldeſt or wouldſt haue.
<i>Aquel hauria,</i>	<i>Ternia &amp; tendria,</i>	He ſhould or would haue.

Plurall.

Plurall.

<i>Nosótroſ a-</i>	<i>Terniamoſ &amp; ten-</i>	Wee ſhould or
<i>uriamoſ,</i>	<i>driamos,</i>	would haue.
<i>Vosótroſ a-</i>	<i>Terniades &amp; ten-</i>	Yee ſhould or
<i>uriades,</i>	<i>driades,</i>	would haue.
<i>Aquelloſ a-</i>	<i>Ternian &amp; ten-</i>	They ſhould or
<i>urían,</i>	<i>drian,</i>	would haue.

The example of the Optatiue. *O quan de gana ternia yo eſſo* : O how willingly would I haue that.

Of the Subiunctiue. *Preguntóme ſi ternia lugar mañana de velle* : He asked me if I ſhould haue leiſure to ſee him to morrow. *Vine acá por ſaber quando v.m.tendria dinero para loſ Soldádoſ* : I came hither to know when you ſhould haue mony for the Souldiers.

The Future of the Subiunctiue.

*Quando, Si,*

When, If.

Singular.

<i>Yo vniére,</i>	<i>Tuniére,</i>	I ſhall haue, I haue.
<i>Tu vniéres,</i>	<i>Tuniéres,</i>	Thou ſhalt haue, thou haſt.
<i>El vniére,</i>	<i>Tuniére,</i>	He ſhall haue, He hath.

Plurall.

<i>Nosótroſ vni-</i>	<i>Tuniéremos,</i>	Wee ſhall haue,
<i>éremos,</i>		We haue.
<i>Vosótroſ vni-</i>	<i>Tuniéredes,</i>	Yee ſhall haue,
<i>éredes,</i>		Yee haue.
<i>Aquelloſ vni-</i>	<i>Tuniéren,</i>	They ſhall haue,
<i>éren.</i>		They haue.

F

After

## After the Future.

<i>Quando, Después que, Si.</i>		When, After that, If.
Singular.		
<i>Yo viére auido,</i>	<i>Tenido,</i>	I shall haue had, I haue had.
<i>Tu viéres auido,</i>	<i>Tenido,</i>	Thou shalt haue had, Thou hast had.
<i>El viére auido,</i>	<i>Tenido,</i>	He shall haue had, He hath had.
Plurall.		
<i>Nosotros viéremos auido,</i>	<i>Tenido,</i>	Wee shall haue had, Wee haue had.
<i>Vosotros viéredes auido,</i>	<i>Tenido,</i>	Yee shall haue had, Yee haue had.
<i>Aquellos viéren auido,</i>	<i>Tenido,</i>	They shall haue had, They haue had.

Note that both these Tenses are as well vsed in the Present, as in the Future, which may appeare by the English: yet to make it more euident, I will giue an example of them both. *Yo se lo daré quando lo tuviere,* I will giue it you when I haue it, or when I shall haue it. *Yo lo haré después que lo viére visto;* I will doe it after I haue seene him, or after I shall haue seene him.

## The Infinitive Mood.

Present. <i>Auér</i> or <i>haué,</i>	<i>Tenér,</i>	To haue.
Perfect. <i>Auér auido,</i>	<i>Tenido,</i>	To haue had.
Future. <i>Estár por auér, estár por tenér,</i>		To be to haue
<i>Haué de tenér, sér por auér,</i>		To ought to haue.
Gerund. <i>Amiénd,</i>	<i>Teniénd,</i>	Hauing.

It

It now remaineth to declare the difference betweene these two Verbes, as touching their vse and application. Know therefore that the first, which is *Haué,* serueth alwayes for an Auxiliar Verbe to coniugate the rest, as hath already beene seene in his owne variation. The other, which is *Tenér,* signifieth to haue something in power and possession; and it is Englished to *hold* throughout all his coniugation: but by reason that his principall signification is to *haue,* I haue put downe that only, remitting the other to the study and iudgement of the Students. Sometimes *Téngo* is vsed in stead of the Auxiliar, as, *Yo téngo dicho arriba,* I haue aboue said, for *Yo he dicho arriba.*

*Sér* and *Estár.*

These two Verbes *Sér* and *Estár* shall be coniugated both in one, for that they be alike in signification, although different in declining, and a little in vse, as shall be said at the end.

## Indicative Mood present.

Singular.		
<i>Yo soy,</i>	<i>estoy,</i>	I am,
<i>Tu eres,</i>	<i>estás,</i>	Thou art,
<i>Aquel es,</i>	<i>está,</i>	He is.
Plurall.		
<i>Nosotros somos,</i>	<i>estamos,</i>	We are.
<i>Vosotros soys,</i>	<i>estáis,</i>	Ye are.
<i>Aquellos són,</i>	<i>están,</i>	They are.

F 2

The

## The Imperfect.

## Singular.

<i>To éra,</i>	<i>estaba,</i>	I was.
<i>Tu éras,</i>	<i>estabas,</i>	Thou wert.
<i>Aquel éra,</i>	<i>estaba,</i>	He was.

## Plurall.

<i>Nos. éramos,</i>	<i>estábamos,</i>	We were.
<i>Vos. érades,</i>	<i>estabades,</i>	Ye were.
<i>Aquellos éran,</i>	<i>estaban,</i>	They were.

## The first Perfect.

## Singular.

<i>Yo fui,</i>	<i>estuve,</i>	I was, or have beene.
<i>Tu fuiste,</i>	<i>estuviste,</i>	Thou wert, or hast beene.
<i>El fue,</i>	<i>estuvo,</i>	He was, or hath beene.

## Plurall.

<i>Nos. fuimos,</i>	<i>estuvimos,</i>	We were, or have beene.
<i>Vos. fuistes,</i>	<i>estuvistes,</i>	Ye were, or have beene.
<i>Ellos fueron,</i>	<i>estuvieron,</i>	They were, or have beene.

## The second Perfect.

## Singular.

<i>Yo he sido,</i>	<i>estado,</i>	I have beene.
<i>Tu has sido,</i>	<i>estado,</i>	Thou hast beene.
<i>El ha sido,</i>	<i>estado,</i>	He hath beene.

## Plurall.

<i>Nos. hemos &amp; havemos sido,</i>	<i>estado,</i>	We have beene.
<i>Vos hanéys sido,</i>	<i>estado,</i>	Ye have beene.
<i>Ellos han sido,</i>	<i>estado,</i>	They have been.

The

## The Pluperfect.

## Singular.

<i>Yo había sido,</i>	<i>estado,</i>	I had beene.
<i>Tu habías sido,</i>	<i>estado,</i>	Thou hadst beene.
<i>El había sido,</i>	<i>estado,</i>	He had beene.

## Plurall.

<i>Nos. habíamos sido,</i>	<i>estado,</i>	We had beene.
<i>Vos. habíades sido,</i>	<i>estado,</i>	Ye had beene.
<i>Ellos habían sido,</i>	<i>estado,</i>	They had beene.

## The Future.

## Singular.

<i>Yo seré,</i>	<i>estaré,</i>	I shall, or will be.
<i>Tu serás,</i>	<i>estarás,</i>	Thou shalt, or wilt be.
<i>Aquel será,</i>	<i>estará,</i>	He shall, or will be.

## Plurall.

<i>Nos. seremos,</i>	<i>estaremos,</i>	We shall, or will be.
<i>Vos. seréys,</i>	<i>estaréys,</i>	Ye shall, or will be.
<i>Ellos serán,</i>	<i>estarán,</i>	They shall, or will be.

## The second Future.

## Singular.

<i>Yo he &amp; tengo de ser,</i>	<i>de estar,</i>	I Shall, will, must, or ought to be, &c.
----------------------------------	------------------	--

<i>Tu has &amp; tienes de ser,</i>	<i>de estar,</i>
<i>Aquel ha &amp; tiene de ser,</i>	<i>de estar,</i>

F 3

Plurall.



## Plurall.

Nos. heámos & tenemos de sér, de estar.  
 Vos. haécys & tenécys de sér, de estar.  
 Ellos han & tienen de sér, de estar.

## The Imperative Mood.

## Singular.

Sé tu, Está tu, Be thou.  
 Sé a quel, Esté a quel, Let him be.

## Plurall.

Seámos nosotros, Estémos nosotros, Let vs be.  
 Sed vosotros, Está l' vosotros, Be yee.  
 Sean aquéllos, Estén aquéllos, Let them be.

## The Optative Future, and Present of the Subjunctive.

Aunque Puesto que,

Although, Albeit.

## Singular.

Yo sea, Esté, I be.  
 Tú seas, Estés, Thou beest.  
 Aquél sea, Esté, He be.

## Plurall.

Nos. seámos, Estémos, Wee be.  
 Vos. seáis, Estéys, Yee be.  
 Aquéllos sean, Estén, They be.

God grant, I pray God

otherwise

## Otherwise for the Subjunctive, as in the Indicative.

Pues que,

Seeing that.

Yo soy,

Estoy,

I am.

Tú eres,

Estás,

Thou art, &c.

## The Imperfect of both.

Aunque, dando que, Although, notwithstanding that.

## Singular.

Yo fuéssse, fué- Estuviéssse, estu-  
 ra, uiéssse, &c.  
 Tú fuésses, Estuviésses.  
 El fuéssse, Estuviéssse,

I were.

Thou wert.

He were.

## Plurall.

Nos. fuésssemos, Estuviésssemos,  
 Vos. fuéssedes, Estuviéssedes,  
 Ellos fuésssen, Estuviésssen,

We were.

Ye were.

They were.

## The Perfect.

Aunque, dando que,

Albeit, Although.

## Singular.

Yo áya sido, Está do, I haue beene.  
 Tú áyas sido, Está do, Thou hast bin.  
 El áya sido, Está do, He hath beene

## Plurall.

Nosotros ayámos sido, Está do, We haue bin.  
 Vosotros ayáis sido, Está do, Yee haue bin.  
 Ellos áyan sido, Está do, They haue bin.

*Quando,* The second Perfect. When.

## Singular.

*Yo úne sido,* *Estádo,* I haue beene.  
*Tu uíste sido,* *Estádo,* Thou hast beene.  
*El úno sido,* *Estádo,* He hath beene.

## Plurall.

*Uímos sido,* *Estádo,* We haue beene.  
*Vuístes sido,* *Estádo,* Ye haue beene.  
*Vuíeron sido,* *Estádo,* They haue beene.

## The Pluperfect.

*Aunque, Puesto que,* Although, Say that.

## Singular.

*Yo fué,* *Estuiera,* I had bin.  
*Tu fué,* *Estuieras,* Thou hadst bin.  
*El fué,* *Estuiera,* He had bin.

## Plurall.

*Nosotros fué-* *Estuieramos,* We had bin.  
*ramos,*  
*Vosotros fué-* *Estuierades,* Ye had bin.  
*rades,*  
*Aquellos fuéran,* *Estuieran,* They had bin.

Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished both like this, and as followeth.

## Singular.

*To uíesse & uí-* *Estádo,* I would, or should haue  
*era sido,* beene.

*Tu uíesses & uí-* *Estádo,* Thou wouldst, or  
*éras sido,* shouldst haue beene.  
*El uíesse & uí-* *Estádo,* He would, or should  
*era sido,* haue beene.

## Plurall.

*Vuíéssamos & uíera-* *Estádo,* Wee would, or  
*mos sido,* should haue bin.  
*Vuíéssedes & uíera-* *Estádo,* Ye would, or should  
*des sido,* haue beene.  
*Vuíessen & uíeran* *Estádo,* They would, or  
*sido,* should haue bin.

## The uncertaine Tense.

## Singular.

*Yo sería,* *Estaría,* I should or would be.  
*Tu serías,* *Estarías,* Thou shouldst or wouldst be.  
*Aquel sería,* *Estaría,* He should or would be.

## Plurall.

*Nosotros seríamos,* *Estaríamos,* We should or would  
 be.  
*Vosotros seríades,* *Estaríades,* Ye should or would  
 be.  
*Aquellos serían,* *Estarían,* They should or  
 would be.

## The Future of the Subjunctive.

*Quando, Si,*

When, If.

## Singular.

*To fuere,* *Estuviere,* I shall be, I am.  
*Tu fueres,* *Estuvieres,* Thou shalt be, thou art  
*El fuere,* *Estuviere,* He shall be, he is.

## Plurall.

## Plurall.

*Nos. fuéremos, Estuviéremos, We shall be, we are.*  
*Vos. fuéredes, Estuviéredes, Ye shall be, ye are.*  
*Ellos fuéren, Estuviéren, They shall be, they are.*

## After the Future.

*Quando, Después que, Si, When, After that, If.*

## Singular.

*Yo viérese sido, Estado, I shall haue beene, I haue beene.*  
*Tu viéreses sido, Estado, Thou shalt haue beene, thou hast beene.*  
*El viérese sido, Estado, He shall haue beene, he hath beene.*

## Plurall.

*Nos. viéremos sido, Estado, We shall haue beene, we haue beene.*  
*Vos. viéredes sido, Estado, Ye shall haue beene, ye haue beene.*  
*Ellos viéren sido, Estado, They shall haue beene, they haue beene.*

## Infinitive.

Present. *Sér, estár, To be.*  
 Perfect. *Auér sido, estado, To haue beene.*  
 Future. *Auér de sér, de estár: Está por sér, To ought to be.*  
 Gerund. *Siendo, Estando, Being.*

The difference betweene *sér* and *está* in the acception and vse of them, consisteth in that *sér* signifieth the essence of something, denoting the quality

lity or quantity ; as, *Sér bueno, sér malo, sér grande, pequeño, tuerto, còxo, &c.* But *está* signifieth to be in some place, as, *Yo estoy en Ròma, yo he estado en París: I am in Rome, I haue beene in Paris.*

It behoueth to note that in asking or demanding how a person doth, the Spaniards still vse the Verbe *está*, and say, *Cómo está, v. m?* How doe you? They likewise answer by the same, saying, *Estoy bueno, soy malo:* or without the Verbe, *bueno para servir á v. m.* Well to doe you seruice : and sometimes also in placing the Verbe behind : as, *bueno estoy.* I am well; *malo estoy.* I am ill. *No estoy muy bueno.* I am not very well. Where it is seene that *bueno* and *malo*, doe not in this place signifie good and bad; but rather, well and ill, Aduerbs. In conclusion, they vse *está* in all that concerneth the Affection or Passion of the Soule, as *Ayrado está.* He is in choler.

Now hauing sufficiently distinguished the Moods and Tenses, with their particles adioyned, as also the persons of the numbers, and the declining of these foure Verbes, *Harér, Tener, Sér, Estár:* the first whereof serueth for an auxiliar to coniugate Verbes Actiues, and the third which is *sér*, aideth to the Passiues; It should be requisite to descend vnto the coniugations, by which all regular Verbes are to be varied: yet neuerthelesse I haue thought it conuenient to speake first concerning the forming of the Tenses, as being a matter (although omitted by the Author) very materiall, and a great helpe vnto the memory.

Know therefore that from three Tenses of the Indicative all the rest are formed, that is, the Present, which in euery Coniugation endeth in *e*, as *amo, lee, súbo*; the first Perfect, which in the first Coniugation endeth in *e*, and in the other two in *i* or *y*, as *amé,*

*amé, ley, subí*; and the Future, which euer ends in *re*, as *amaré, leeré, subiré*.

Now from the first person plurall of the Present, is formed the Imperfect, by changing *mos* into *va* in the first Coniugation, as *amamos amava*, and in the other two by changing *emos* and *imos* into *ia*, as *leemos leia, subimos subia*.

From the third person singular of the Present, commeth the Imperatiue, and the present of the Subiunctiue, as *Amo*, Imperat. *ama*, Subiunct. *ame*; *Léo*, Imper. *Lée*, Subiunct. *Lée*; *Súbo*, Imperat. *súbe*, Subiunct. *suba*.

From the Perfect commeth the Imperfect, and first Pluperfect of the Optatiue, and the Future of the Subiunctiue, as of *Ley*, comes *Leyesse, leyera, leyere*; of *Subí*, *subiessa, subiera, subiere*: But in the first coniugation *e* must be changed into *a*, as of *Amé*, *amasse, amara, amare*; *Hablé*, *hablasse, hablara, hablare*, &c.

Of the Future is formed the vncertaine Tense, by changing *e* into *ia*, in euery coniugation, as *Amaré amaria, leeré leeria, subiré subiria*.

This will be sufficient for the forming of the Tenses: wherefore it is now time to come vnto the coniugations, which are three as I haue formerly said: but first of that whose Infinitiu endeth in *ar*, as *amar*, which I will here put downe.

### *How to decline a Verbe of the first Coniugation.*

*Indicative Mood, Present Tense.*

<i>Yo amo,</i>	<i>I loue.</i>
<i>Tu ámas,</i>	<i>Thou louest.</i>
<i>Aquel áma,</i>	<i>He loueth.</i>
<i>Nosotros amamos,</i>	<i>We loue.</i>

*Vosotros*

*Vosotros amáis,*  
*Aquellos aman,*

*Ye loue.*  
*They loue.*

### *Imperfect.*

*To amava,*  
*Amavas,*  
*Amava,*  
*Amauamos,*  
*Amauades,*  
*Amauan,*

*I did loue.*  
*Thou didst loue.*  
*He did loue.*  
*We did loue.*  
*Ye did loue.*  
*They did loue.*

### *First Perfect.*

*To amé,*  
*Amaste,*  
*Amó,*  
*Amamos,*  
*Amastes,*  
*Amaron,*

*I loued.*  
*Thou louedst.*  
*He loued.*  
*We loued.*  
*Ye loued.*  
*They loued.*

### *Second Perfect.*

*To he amado,*  
*Has amado,*  
*Ha amado,*  
*Hemos or hauemos amado,*  
*Hauéys amado,*  
*Han amado,*

*I haue loued.*  
*Thou hast loued.*  
*He hath loued.*  
*We haue loued.*  
*Ye haue loued.*  
*They haue loued.*

### *Pluperfect.*

*To auia amado,*  
*Auias amado,*  
*Auia amado,*  
*Auiamos amado,*  
*Auiades amado,*  
*Auian amado,*

*I had loued.*  
*Thou hadst loued.*  
*He had loued.*  
*We had loued.*  
*Ye had loued.*  
*They had loued.*

*Future.*

## Future.

Yo amaré,  
Amarás,  
Amará,  
Amarémos,  
Amaréys,  
Amarán,

I shall or will loue.  
Thou shalt or wilt loue.  
He shall or will loue.  
We shall or will loue.  
Ye shall or will loue.  
They shall or will loue.

## Second Future.

Yo he, & tengo de amar,  
Has & tienes de amar,  
Ha & tiene de amar,  
Hémos & tenemos de amar,  
Hauéys & tenéys de amar,  
Han & tienen de amar,

I shall, will, must, or  
ought to loue, &c.

## Imperative.

Amatu,  
Ame aquél,  
Amémosnosótro,  
Amá losótro,  
Amen aquéllos,

Loue thou,  
Let him loue.  
Let vs loue.  
Loue ye.  
Let them loue.

Optative Mood Future, and Present of  
the Subiunctive.

Aunque, &c.

Although.

Oxala, &c.  
Yo ame,  
Ames,  
Ame,  
Amémos,  
Améys,  
Amen,

God grant  
I loue.  
Thou louest.  
He loueth.  
We loue.  
Ye loue.  
They loue.

Otherwise

Otherwise for the Subiunctive, as in  
the Indicative.

Pues, or pues que,

Seeing, or seeing that.

Yo amo,  
Tu amas,  
El ama, &c.

I loue.  
Thou louest.  
He loueth, &c.

## Imperfect.

Aunque.

Although.

Yo amasse, amara, &c.  
Amasses,

I loued or did loue.  
Thou louedst or didst  
loue.

Oxala  
Amasse,  
Amassemos,  
Amassedes,  
Amassen.

Would to God  
He loued or did loue.  
We loued or did loue.  
Ye loued or did loue.  
They loued or did loue.

## Perfect.

Aunque, &c.

Although.

Téga a Dios que  
Yo aya amado,  
Ayas amado,  
Aya amado,  
Ayamos amado,  
Ayais amado,  
Ayan amado.

I pray God that  
I haue loued.  
Thou hast loued.  
He hath loued.  
We haue loued.  
Ye haue loued.  
They haue loued.

## 2. Perfect.

Quando,

When.

Yo úne amado,  
Vuiſte amado,  
Uno amado,

I haue loued.  
Thou hast loued.  
He hath loued.

Primeros

<i>Vuimos amado,</i>	We haue loued.
<i>Vuistes amado,</i>	Ye haue loued.
<i>Vuieron amado,</i>	They haue loued.

*Pluperfect.*

<i>Aunque,</i>	Although.
<i>To amara,</i>	I had loued.
<i>Amaras,</i>	Thou hadst loued.
<i>Amara,</i>	He had loued.
<i>Amaramos,</i>	We had loued.
<i>Amarades,</i>	Ye had loued.
<i>Amaran.</i>	They had loued.

Otherwise with the auxiliar, Englished like this, and as followeth.

<i>Aunque,</i>	Although.
<i>To viuiesse &amp; viuiera amado,</i>	I would or should haue loued.
<i>Vuiesse &amp; viuieras amado,</i>	Thou wouldst or shouldst haue loued.
<i>Vuiesse &amp; viuiera amado,</i>	Hee would or should haue loued.
<i>Vuiessemos &amp; viuieramos amado,</i>	Wee would or should haue loued.
<i>Vuiesseades &amp; viuierades amado,</i>	Yewould or should haue loued.
<i>Vuiesssen &amp; viuieran amado,</i>	They would or should haue loued.

*Vncertaine Tense.*

<i>To amaria,</i>	I should or would loue.
<i>Amarias,</i>	Thou shouldst or wouldst loue.
<i>Amaria,</i>	He should or would loue.
	<i>Amariamos,</i>

<i>Amariamos,</i>	We should or would loue.
<i>Amariaades,</i>	Ye should or would loue.
<i>Amarian,</i>	They should or would loue.

*Quando, Si,* When, If.

<i>To amare,</i>	I shall or will loue, I loue.
<i>Amares,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt loue, thou louest.
<i>Amare,</i>	He shall or will loue, he loueth.
<i>Amaremos,</i>	We shall or will loue, we loue.
<i>Amaredes,</i>	Ye shall or will loue, ye loue.
<i>Amaren,</i>	They shall or will loue, they loue.

*After the Future.*

<i>Quando, despues que, Si,</i>	When, After that, If.
<i>To viuiera amado,</i>	I shall haue loued, I haue loued.
<i>Vuieres amado,</i>	Thou shalt haue loued, thou hast loued.
<i>Vuiera amado,</i>	He shall haue loued, he hath loued.
<i>Vuiéremos amado,</i>	We shal haue loued, we haue loued.
<i>Vuiéredes amado,</i>	Ye shall haue loued, ye haue loued.
<i>Vuiéren amado,</i>	They shall haue loued, they haue loued.

*Infinitive.*

Present.	<i>Amár,</i>	To loue.
Perfect.	<i>Auér amado,</i>	To haue loued.
Future.	<i>Auér de amár,</i>	To ought to loue.
Gerund.	<i>Amádo,</i>	To be to loue.
		Louing.

I haue not in this Verbe made a distinction of the numbers as in the former, neither adioyned the persons, which I purpose to omit likewise in the rest, for that they be not so generally vsed with the Verbes:

But now we are come to the second coniugation whose Infinitive ends in *ér*, as *Leer*, *Correr*, and the like.

*How to decline a Verbe of the second Coniugation.*

*Indicative Moode, Present Tense.*

<i>Yo leo,</i>	I reade.
<i>Tu lees,</i>	Thou readest.
<i>El lee,</i>	He readeth.
<i>Nosotros leemos,</i>	We reade.
<i>Vosotros leéis,</i>	Ye reade.
<i>Ellos leen,</i>	They reade.

*Imperfect.*

<i>Yo leya,</i>	I did reade.
<i>Leyas,</i>	Thou didst reade.
<i>Leya,</i>	He did reade.
<i>Leyamos,</i>	We did reade.
<i>Leyades,</i>	Ye did reade.
<i>Leyan,</i>	They did reade.

*First Perfect.*

<i>Yo ley,</i>	I read.
<i>Leyste,</i>	Thou readst.
<i>Leyó,</i>	He read.
<i>Leymos,</i>	We read.
<i>Leystes,</i>	Ye read.
<i>Leyéron,</i>	They read.

*Second Perfect.*

<i>Yo he leydo,</i>	I haue read.
<i>Has leydo,</i>	Thou hast read.

*Ha*

<i>Ha leydo,</i>	He hath read.
<i>Hemos or hanemos leydo,</i>	We haue read.
<i>Hanéis leydo,</i>	Ye haue read.
<i>Han leydo,</i>	They haue read.

*Pluperfect.*

<i>To ania leydo,</i>	I had read.
<i>Anias leydo,</i>	Thou hadst read.
<i>Ani le do,</i>	He had read.
<i>Aniamos leydo,</i>	We had read.
<i>Aniades leydo,</i>	Ye had read.
<i>Anian leydo,</i>	They had read.

*Future.*

<i>Yo leeré,</i>	I shall or will reade.
<i>Leerás,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt reade
<i>Leerá,</i>	He shall or will reade.
<i>Leeremos,</i>	We shall or will reade.
<i>Leeréis,</i>	Ye shall or will reade.
<i>Leerán,</i>	They shall or will reade.

*Second Future.*

<i>Yo he &amp; tengo de leer,</i>	I shall, will, must, or ought to reade, &c.
-----------------------------------	---

*Has & tienes de leer.*  
*Ha & tiene de leer.*  
*Hemos & tenemos de leer.*  
*Hanéis & tenéis de leer.*  
*Han & tienen de leer.*

*Imperative.*

<i>Lée tu,</i>	Reade thou.
<i>Léa aquel,</i>	Let him reade.
<i>Leámos nosotros,</i>	Let vs reade.

G 2

*Leed*

*Leed vosotros,*                      *Reade yee.*  
*Leen aquéllos,*                   *Let them reade.*

*Optative Mood Future, and Present of the Subjunctive.*

*Aunque,*                                      *Although.*

*Plega a Dios que* *Yo Léa,*                      *I pray God that I reade.*  
*Léas,*                                      *Thou readest.*  
*Léa,*                                      *He readeth.*  
*Lcámos,*                               *We reade.*  
*Leáys,*                               *Ye reade.*  
*Léan,*                               *They reade.*

*Otherwise for the Subjunctive, as in the Indicative.*

*Pués or Puésque,*                      *Seeing that.*  
*Yo léo,*                                   *I reade.*  
*Lées, &c.*                               *Thou readest.*

*Aunque,*                                      *Imperfect.*                      *Albeit.*  
*Yo leyésse, leyéa, &c.*              *I read or did reade.*  
*Leyésse,*                               *Thou readst or didst reade*  
*Leyésse,*                               *He read or did reade.*  
*Leyéssemos,*                       *We read or did reade.*  
*Leyéssedes,*                       *Ye read or did reade.*  
*Leyéssen,*                           *They read or did reade.*

*Aunque, &c.*                                      *Perfect.*                      *Although.*  
*Plega a Dios que* *Yo leya leydo,*              *I pray God that I haue read.*  
*Ayas leydo,*                           *Thou hast read.*  
*Aya Leydo,*                           *He hath read.*  
*Ayámos leydo,*                   *We haue read.*  
*Ayáis leydo,*                       *Ye haue read.*  
*Ayan leydo,*                       *They haue read.*

*2. Imperfect.*

*2. Imperfect.*                      *When.*

*Quando,*                                      *I haue read.*  
*Yo úue leydo,*                      *Thou hast read.*  
*Uíste leydo,*                      *He hath read.*  
*Uuo leydo,*                      *We haue read.*  
*Uuímos leydo,*                      *Ye haue read.*  
*Uuístes leydo,*                      *They haue read.*  
*Uuíeron leydo,*

*Pluperfect.*

*Aunque,*                                      *Although.*

*Oxala, &c.*                                      *Would to God* *I had read.*  
*Yo leyéa,*                                      *Thou hadst read.*  
*Leyéas,*                                      *He had read.*  
*Leyéa,*                                      *We had read.*  
*Leyéramos,*                               *Ye had read.*  
*Leyérades,*                               *They had read.*  
*Leyéran,*

*Otherwise with the auxiliar, Englished like this, and as followeth.*

*Aunque,*                                      *Although.*

*Plega a Dios que* *Yo uniesse & uniera*              *I would or should haue*  
*leydo,*                                      *read.*  
*Uniesse & unieras*                      *Thou wouldst or shouldst*  
*leydo,*                                      *haue read.*  
*Uniesse & uniera*                      *He would or should haue*  
*leydo,*                                      *read.*  
*Uniessemos & unie-*                      *We would or should*  
*ramos leydo,*                               *haue read.*  
*Uniesse & uniera-*                      *Ye would or should haue*  
*des leydo,*                               *read.*  
*Uniesen & unieran*                      *They would or should*  
*leydo,*                                      *haue read.*



*Uncertain Tense.*

<i>To Leerís,</i>	I should or would reade.
<i>Leerías,</i>	Thou shouldst or wouldst reade.
<i>Leería,</i>	He should or would reade.
<i>Leeríamos,</i>	We should or would reade.
<i>Leeríades,</i>	Ye should or would reade.
<i>Leerían,</i>	They should or would reade.

*Future of the Subjunctive.*

*Quando, Si,* When, If.

<i>To Leyere,</i>	I shall or will reade, I reade.
<i>Leyeres,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt reade, Thou readest.
<i>Leyere,</i>	He shall or will reade, He readeth.
<i>Leyéremos,</i>	We shall or will reade, We reade.
<i>Leyéredes,</i>	Ye shall or will reade, Ye reade.
<i>Leyeren,</i>	They shall or will reade, They reade.

*After the Future.*

<i>Quando, después que, Si,</i>	When, after that, If.
<i>To viere leído,</i>	I shall have read, I have read.
<i>Vieres leído,</i>	Thou shalt have read, Thou hast read.
<i>Viere leído,</i>	He shall have read, He hath read.
<i>Viéremos leído,</i>	We shall have read, We have read.
<i>Viéredes leído,</i>	Ye shall have read, Ye have read.
<i>Vieren leído,</i>	They shall have read, They have read.

*Infinitive.*

Present.	<i>Leer,</i> To reade.
Perfect.	<i>Auer leído,</i> To have read.

Future.

Future.	<i>Auer de leer,</i> To ought to reade.
	<i>Sér para leer, estar para leer,</i> To be to read.
Gerund.	<i>Leyendo.</i>

The second coniugation now ended, the third of course is to succeed, whose infinitive endeth in *ir* or *yr*, as *Oyr, dormir, subir*, and the like.

*How to decline a Verbe of the third Coniugation.**Indicative Mood, Present Tense.*

<i>To oyo,</i>	I heare.
<i>Tu oyes,</i>	Thou hearest.
<i>El oye,</i>	He heareth.
<i>Nosotros oymos,</i>	We heare.
<i>Vosotros oys,</i>	Ye heare.
<i>Aquellos oyen,</i>	They heare.

*Imperfect.*

<i>To oya,</i>	I did heare.
<i>Oyas,</i>	Thou didst heare.
<i>Oya,</i>	He did heare.
<i>Oyamos,</i>	We did heare.
<i>Oyades,</i>	Ye did heare.
<i>Oyan,</i>	They did heare.

*First Perfect.*

<i>To oy,</i>	I heard.
<i>Oyiste,</i>	Thou heardst.
<i>Oyó,</i>	He heard.
<i>Oyimos,</i>	We heard.
<i>Oyistes,</i>	Ye heard.
<i>Oyeron,</i>	They heard.

G 4

Second

## Second Perfect.

To he oydo,	I haue heard.
Has oydo,	Thou hast heard.
Ha oydo,	He hath heard.
Hémos oydo,	We haue heard.
Hauéys oydo,	Ye haue heard.
Han oydo,	They haue heard.

## Pluperfect.

To auía oydo,	I had heard.
Auías oydo,	Thou hadst heard.
Auía oydo,	He had heard.
Auíamos oydo,	We had heard.
Auíades oydo,	Ye had heard.
Auían oydo,	They had heard.

## Future.

To oyre,	I shall or will hear.
Oyrás,	Thou shalt or wilt hear.
Oyrá,	He shall or will hear.
Oyrémos,	We shall or will hear.
Oyréis,	Ye shall or will hear.
Oyrán,	They shall or will hear.

## 2. Future.

To he & tengo de oyr,	I shall, will, must, or ought to hear, &c.
Has & tienes de oyr,	
Ha & tiene de oyr,	
Hémos & tenemos de oyr,	
Hauéys & tenéys de oyr,	
Han & tienen de oyr.	

## Imperative.

## Imperative.

Oye tu,	Hear thou.
Oyga aquél,	Let him hear.
Oygámosnosótro,	Let vs hear.
Oyd vosotros,	Hear ye.
Oygan aquéllos,	Let them hear.

## Optative Mood Future, and Present of the Subiunctive.

## Aunque, &amp;c.

## Although.

To oyga,	I hear.
Oygas,	Thou hearest.
Oyga,	He heareth.
Oygámos,	We hear.
Oygáis,	Ye hear.
Oygan,	They hear.

## Otherwise for the Subiunctive, as in the Indicative.

Pues que.	Seeing that.
To oygo,	I hear.
Oyes,	Thou hearest.
Oye, &c.	He heareth, &c.

## Imperfect.

## Aunque &amp;c.

## Although.

To oyéssse, oyéra &c.	I heard or did hear.
Oyésses,	Thou heardst or didst hear.
Oyéssse,	He heard or did hear.
Oyésssemos,	We heard or did hear.
Oyésssedes,	Ye heard or did hear.
Oyésssen,	They heard or did hear.

Would to God

## Perfect.

## Perfect.

Aunque, &amp;c.

Albeit.

*Pléga a Dios que*  
 Yo áya oydo,  
 Ayas oydo,  
 Ayáyo oydo,  
 Ayámos oydo,  
 Ayáis oydo,  
 Ayán oydo,

I have heard.  
 Thou hast heard.  
 He hath heard.  
 We have heard.  
 Ye have heard.  
 They have heard.

## 2. Perfect.

Quando.

When.

Yo áne oydo,  
 Vuiste oydo,  
 Vuo oydo,  
 Vuimos oydo,  
 Vuistes oydo,  
 Vuiéron oydo,

I have heard.  
 Thou hast heard.  
 He hath heard.  
 We have heard.  
 Ye have heard.  
 They have heard.

## Pluperfect.

Aunque, &amp;c.

Although.

*Oxala*  
 Yo oyéra,  
 Oyéras,  
 Oyéra,  
 Oyéramos,  
 Oyérades,  
 Oyéran,

I had heard.  
 Thou hadst heard.  
 He had heard.  
 We had heard.  
 Ye had heard.  
 They had heard.

Likewise

Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,  
 and as followeth.

*Pluguiera a Dios que*  
 Yo vniéffe & vniéra  
 oydo,  
 Vniéffes & vniéras  
 oydo,  
 Vniéffe & vniéra  
 oydo,  
 Vniéffemos & vniéramos  
 oydo,  
 Vniéffedes & vniérades  
 oydo,  
 Vniéffén & vniéran  
 oydo,

I would or should have heard.  
 Thou wouldest or shouldst have heard.  
 Hee would or should have heard.  
 Wee would or should have heard.  
 Yee would or should have heard.  
 They would or should have heard.

Uncertaine Tense.

Yo oyria,  
 Oyrias,  
 Oyria,  
 Oyriamos,  
 Oyriades,  
 Oyrian,  
 I should or would hear.  
 Thou shouldst or wouldst hear.  
 He should or would hear.  
 We should or would hear.  
 Ye should or would hear.  
 They should or would hear.

Future of the Subjunctive.

Quando, Si,

When, If.

Yo oyére,  
 Oyéres,  
 Oyére,  
 Oyéremos,  
 Oyéredes,  
 Oyéren,  
 I shall or will hear, I hear.  
 Thou shalt or wilt hear, Thou hearest.  
 He shall or will hear, He heareth.  
 We shall or will hear, We hear.  
 Ye shall or will hear, Ye hear.  
 They shall or will hear, They hear.

After

## After the Future.

<i>Quando, Después que, Si,</i>	When, After that, If.
<i>To viéere oydo,</i>	I shall haue heard, I haue heard.
<i>Vuiéres oydo,</i>	Thou shalt haue heard, Thou hast heard.
<i>Vuiéere oydo,</i>	Hee shall haue heard, He hath heard.
<i>Vuiéremos oydo,</i>	We shall haue heard, We haue heard.
<i>Vuiéredes oydo,</i>	Yee shall haue heard, Ye haue heard.
<i>Vuiéren oydo,</i>	They shall haue heard, They haue heard.

## Infinitive.

Present.	<i>Oyr,</i>	To heare.
Perfect.	<i>Anér oydo,</i>	To haue heard.
Future.	<i>Anér de oyr,</i>	To ought to heare.
	<i>Estár por oyr,</i>	To be to heare.
Gerund.	<i>Oyéndo,</i>	Hearing.

Note here a generall rule, that all such Verbes as change their formative letter, that is, the letter of the Infinitive Mood, they doe it onely in the three persons singular, and the third plurall of the present of the Indicative, Imperative, and Subiunctive: as for example, *Assentár* in the Infinitive, maketh in the Indicative *Assiento, assientas, assienta, assentamos, assentáis, assientan*. In the Imperative, *Assienta tu, assiente aquél; assentémos, assentád, assienten*. In the Pres. of the Subiunct. or Future of the Optat. *Aunque, Ojala, yo assiente, assientes assiente; Assentémos, assentéis, assienten*. And the same may be seene in this

this Verbe ensuing, which for to giue some notes of it shall be declined.

The declining of the Verbe, *Holgár*.

Which hath in English diuers significations: as, to be glad, to recreate ones selfe, to be well at ease, to repose, to make Holy-day, to doe nothing, to take breath: of all which we will make vse of the first; that is, to be glad.

## Indicative Mood, Present Tense.

<i>To me huelgo,</i>	I am glad.
<i>Tu te huelgas,</i>	Thou art glad.
<i>El se huelga,</i>	He is glad.
<i>Nosotros nos holgámos,</i>	We are glad.
<i>Vosotros os holgáis,</i>	Ye are glad.
<i>Elos se huelgan,</i>	They are glad.

Note that this Verbe is often construed with *Me, te, se, nos, os*, and sometimes without them being vnderstood; wherefore it shall not be needfull to repeat them further in declining of the Verbe.

## Imperfect.

<i>To holgáua,</i>	I was glad.
<i>Holgáuas,</i>	Thou wert glad.
<i>Holgáua,</i>	He was glad.
<i>Holgáuamos,</i>	We were glad.
<i>Holgáuades,</i>	Ye were glad.
<i>Holguán,</i>	They were glad.

## First Perfect.

<i>To holgué,</i>	I was, or haue beene glad.
<i>Holgaste,</i>	Thou wert, or hast beene glad.
	<i>Holgó,</i>

<i>Holgó,</i>	He was, or hath beene glad.
<i>Holgámos,</i>	We were, or haue beene glad.
<i>Holgástes,</i>	Ye were, or haue beene glad.
<i>Holgáron,</i>	They were, or haue beene glad.

Here is to be obserued that all Verbes whose Infinitives end in *gár*, as doth *Holgár*, doe forme their first Perfects, by changing *gár* into *gué*, and therefore it is written *Holgué* and not *holgé*, which were to be pronounced like *holjé* or *holxé*, where the primitive sound is lost. Likewise those Verbes that end in *cár* doe follow the same rule by changing *cár* into *qué*, as *Cercár* in the Infinitive, maketh in the first Perfect *cerqué*, and *Mercár*, *merqué*; *Trocár*, *troqué*, &c.

## Second Perfect.

<i>To he holgado,</i>	I haue beene glad.
<i>Has holgado, &amp;c.</i>	Thou hast beene glad, &c.

## Pluperfect.

<i>To auia holgado,</i>	I had beene glad,
<i>Anias holgado, &amp;c.</i>	Thou hadst beene glad, &c.

## Future.

<i>To holgaré,</i>	I shall or will be glad.
<i>Holgarás,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt be glad.
<i>Holgará,</i>	He shall or will be glad.
<i>Holgarémos,</i>	We shall or will be glad.
<i>Holgaréys,</i>	Ye shall or will be glad.
<i>Holgarán,</i>	They shall or will be glad.

## Second Future.

<i>To he de holgar, &amp;c.</i>	I shall, will, must, or ought to be glad, &c.
<i>Téngo de holgar, &amp;c.</i>	

## Imperative.

## Imperative.

<i>Huélga te tu,</i>	Be thou glad.
<i>Huélgue se aquél,</i>	Let him be glad.
<i>Holguémos nosótro,</i>	Let vs be glad.
<i>Holgád vosótro,</i>	Be ye glad.
<i>Huélgen se aquéllos,</i>	Let them be glad.

## Optative Future, and Present of the Subiunctive.

## Anne, &amp;c.

## Although.

<i>To huélgue,</i>	I be glad.
<i>Huélgues,</i>	Thou beest glad.
<i>Huélgue,</i>	He be glad.
<i>Holguémos,</i>	We be glad.
<i>Holguéys,</i>	Ye be glad.
<i>Huélguen,</i>	They be glad.

Note that both in this Tense and in the Imperative, *u* is likewise interposed, that it may not alter the sound of the Infinitive, which otherwise it should lose. And the like is of all Verbes in *cár*, which is turned into *qué* in the same places.

## Otherwise for the Subiunctive, as in the Indicative.

<i>Pués, or pués que,</i>	Seeing that.
<i>To huélgo,</i>	I am glad.
<i>Huélgas, &amp;c.</i>	Thou art glad, &c.
	Imperfect.

## Imperfect.

Aunque, &amp;c.

Although, or Although that.

Oxala, Plugniéffe  
a Diós queYo holgáffe, holgára, &c.  
Holgáffes,  
Holgáffe,  
Holgáffemos,  
Holgáffedes,  
Holgáffen,Would to God  
thatI were glad  
Thou wert glad.  
He were glad  
We were glad.  
Ye were glad.  
They were glad.

## Perfect.

Aunque, &amp;c.

Albeit, or Although.

Pléga á Diós que

Yo áya holgádo,  
Ayas holgádo,  
Aya holgádo,  
Ayámos holgádo,  
Ayáis holgádo,  
Ayan holgádo.

I pray God that

I haue beene glad.  
Thou hast beene glad.  
He hath beene glad.  
We haue beene glad.  
Ye haue beene glad.  
They haue beene glad.

## 2. Perfect.

Quando,

When.

Yo úue holgádo,  
Vuiſte holgádo, &c.I haue beene glad.  
Thou haſt beene glad.

## Pluperfect.

Aunque,

Although.

Oxala

Yo holgára,  
Holgáras,  
Holgára,  
Holgáramos,  
Holgárades,  
Holgáran,

Would to God

I had beene glad.  
Thou hadſt beene glad.  
He had beene glad.  
We had beene glad.  
Ye had beene glad.  
They had beene glad.

Likewise

Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,  
and as followeth.

To vuiéſſe & vuiéra hol- I would or ſhould haue  
gádo, beene glad.  
Vuiéſſes & vuiéras hol- Thou wouldſt or ſhouldſt  
gádo, &c. haue beene glad, &c.

## Uncertaine tenſe.

To holgaría, I ſhould or would be glad.  
Holgáras, Thou ſhouldſt or wouldſt be glad.  
Holgáran, He ſhould or would be glad.  
Holgáramos, We ſhould or would be glad.  
Holgárades, Ye ſhould or would be glad.  
Holgáran, They ſhould or would be glad.

## Future of the Subiunctiue.

Quando, Si,

When, If.

To holgáre, I ſhall or will be glad.  
Holgáres, Thou ſhalt or wilt be glad.  
Holgáre, He ſhall or will be glad.  
Holgáremos, We ſhall or will be glad.  
Holgáredes, Ye ſhall or will be glad.  
Holgáren, They ſhall or will be glad. And, I  
am glad, &c. As in the Pretent  
of the Indicatiue.

## After the Future.

Quando, deſpués que, Si, When, After that, If.

To vuiére holgádo, I ſhall haue beene glad, I haue  
beene glad.  
Vuiéres holgádo, &c. Thou ſhalt haue beene glad,  
Thou haſt beene glad, &c.  
H Infinitiue.

## Infinitive.

Present.	<i>Holgár,</i>	To be glad.
Perfect.	<i>Auer holgádo,</i>	To haue beene glad.
Future.	<i>Auer de holgár,</i> <i>Estár por holgár,</i>	To ought to be glad.
Gerund.	<i>Holgádo,</i>	To be to be glad. Being glad.

Of the Verbe *Dár*, To giue.

*Dár*, which maketh *dóy* in the first person present of the Indicative, doth in nothing differ from *Estár* which is before declined with the verbe *Ser*, sauing only in the first Perfect, where it formeth *Dí, diste, dió, Dímos, distes, diéron*; and in all the rest is coniugated as I haue said.

The declining of the verbe *Querér*, which signifieth to will, or to be willing; and To loue.

## Indicative Mood, Present Tense.

<i>To quiero,</i>	I wil; and I loue, &c See in <i>Amo</i> , where it is set downe at large.
<i>Quiéres,</i>	Thou wilt.
<i>Quiere,</i>	He will.
<i>Querémos,</i>	We will.
<i>Queréis,</i>	Ye will.
<i>Quiéren,</i>	They will.

## Imperfect.

<i>To querías,</i>	I did will or was willing.
<i>Querías,</i>	Thou didst will or wert willing.
<i>Quería,</i>	He did will or was willing.
<i>Queríamos,</i>	We did will or were willing.
<i>Queríades,</i>	Ye did will or were willing.
<i>Querían,</i>	They did will or were willing.

First

## First Perfect.

<i>To quise,</i>	I willed or was willing.
<i>Quesiste,</i>	Thou willedst or wert willing.
<i>Quiso,</i>	He willed or was willing.
<i>Quisimos,</i>	We willed or were willing.
<i>Quisistes,</i>	Ye willed or were willing.
<i>Quisieron,</i>	They willed or were willing.

## 2. Perfect.

<i>To be querido,</i>	I haue beene willing.
<i>Has querido, &amp;c.</i>	Thou hast beene willing, &c.

## Pluperfect.

<i>To auia querido,</i>	I had beene willing.
<i>Auias querido, &amp;c.</i>	Thou hadst beene willing, &c.

## Future.

<i>To querre,</i>	I shall or will be willing.
<i>Querrás,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt be willing.
<i>Querrá,</i>	He shall or will be willing.
<i>Querrémos,</i>	We shall or will be willing.
<i>Querréis,</i>	Ye shall or will be willing.
<i>Querrán,</i>	They shall or will be willing.

## 2. Future.

<i>To be &amp; tengo de querér,</i>	I shall, will, must or ought to be willing, &c.
-------------------------------------	---

## Imperative.

<i>Quiér tu,</i>	Be thou willing.
<i>Quiera aquél,</i>	Let him be willing.
	H 2 <i>Querámos.</i>

<i>Querámos nosótro,</i>	Let vs be willing.
<i>Queréd vosótro,</i>	Be ye willing.
<i>Quiéran aquéllos,</i>	Let them be willing.

*Optatine Future, and Present of the Subiunctive.*

*Aunque, &c.*

Although.

<i>Oxala, &amp;c.</i>	<i>Yo quiera,</i>	I will.
	<i>Quiéras,</i>	Thou wilt.
	<i>Quiéra,</i>	He will.
	<i>Querámos,</i>	We will.
	<i>Queráys,</i>	Ye will.
	<i>Quiéran,</i>	They will.

I pray God

*Otherwise for the Subiunctive.*

*Pues,*

Seeing that.

<i>Yo quiero,</i>	I will.
<i>Tu quieres, &amp;c.</i>	Thou wilt, &c.

*Imperfect.*

*Aunque,*

Although.

<i>Oxala</i>	<i>Yo quisiese, quisiera, &amp;c.</i>	I were willing.
	<i>Quisieses,</i>	Thou wert willing.
	<i>Quisiese,</i>	He were willing.
	<i>Quisiessemos,</i>	We were willing.
	<i>Quisiesseades,</i>	Ye were willing.
	<i>Quisiesen,</i>	They were willing.

Would to God

*Perfect.*

*Perfect.*

*Aunque,*

Although.

<i>Oxala</i>	<i>To áya querido,</i>	I haue beene willing.
	<i>Ayas que-ido,</i>	Thou hast been willing.
	<i>Aya querido,</i>	He hath beene willing.
	<i>Ayámos querido,</i>	We haue beene willing.
	<i>Ayáis querido,</i>	Ye haue beene willing.
	<i>Ayan querido,</i>	They haue been willing.

I pray God

2. *Perfect.*

*Quando,*

When.

<i>To úne querido,</i>	I haue beene willing.
<i>Vnieste querido, &amp;c.</i>	Thou hast been willing, &c.

*Pluperfect.*

*Aunque,*

Although that.

<i>Oxala</i>	<i>Yo quisiera,</i>	I had beene willing.
	<i>Quisieras,</i>	Thou hadst beene willing.
	<i>Quisiera,</i>	He had beene willing.
	<i>Quisieramos,</i>	We had beene willing.
	<i>Quisierades,</i>	Ye had beene willing.
	<i>Quisieran,</i>	They had beene willing.

Would to God

*Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this, and as followeth.*

<i>To uniese &amp; uniera</i>	I would, or should haue
<i>querido,</i>	beene willing.
<i>Vniesses &amp; unieras</i>	Thou wouldest, or shouldst
<i>querido, &amp;c.</i>	haue beene willing, &c.



*Uncertaine Tense.*

<i>To querria,</i>	I would, I should be willing.
<i>Querrias,</i>	Thou wouldst, Thou shouldst be willing.
<i>Querria,</i>	He would, He should be willing.
<i>Querriamos,</i>	We would, We should be willing.
<i>Querriades,</i>	Ye would, Ye should be willing.
<i>Querrian,</i>	They would, They should be willing.

*Future of the Subiunctive.*

<i>Quando, Si,</i>	When, If.
<i>To quisiera,</i>	I shall or will be willing, I will.
<i>Quisieras,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt be willing, Thou wilt.
<i>Quisiera,</i>	He shall or will be willing, Hee will.
<i>Quisieramos,</i>	We shall or will be willing, We will.
<i>Quisierades, &amp; qui-</i>	Yee shall or will be willing, Yee will.
<i>sierdes,</i>	
<i>Quisieren,</i>	They shall or will be willing, They will.

*After the Future.*

<i>Quando, Despues que, Si.</i>	When, After that, If.
<i>To viere querido,</i>	I shall haue beene willing, I haue beene willing.
<i>Vieres querido, &amp;c.</i>	Thou shalt haue beene willing, Thou hast beene willing, &c.

*Infinitive.**Infinitive.*

Present, <i>Querér,</i>	To be willing.
Perfect. <i>Auer querido,</i>	To haue beene willing.
Future. <i>Aver de querér,</i>	To ought to be willing.
<i>Estár por querér,</i>	To be to be willing.
Gerund. <i>Queriendo,</i>	Willing.

The declining of the Verbe *Podér*, to may or can, or to be able.

*Indicative Mood, Present Tense.*

<i>To puedo,</i>	I may or can, or I am able.
<i>Puedes,</i>	Thou maist or canst, or thou art able.
<i>Puede,</i>	He may or can, or he is able.
<i>Podemos,</i>	We may or can, or we are able.
<i>Podéis,</i>	Ye may or can, or ye are able.
<i>Pueden,</i>	They may or can, or they are able.

*Imperfect.*

<i>To podia,</i>	I might or could, or I was able.
<i>Podias,</i>	Thou mightst or couldst, or thou wert able.
<i>Podia,</i>	He might or could, or he was able.
<i>Podiamos,</i>	We might or could, or we were able.
<i>Podiades,</i>	Ye might or could, or ye were able.
<i>Podian,</i>	They might or could, or they were able.

*First Perfect.*

<i>To pude,</i>	This Tense is Englished as in the Im-
<i>Pudiste,</i>	perfect.
<i>Pudo,</i>	
<i>Pudimos,</i>	
<i>Pudistes,</i>	
<i>Pudieron,</i>	

## 2. Perfect.

<i>To he podido,</i>	I haue beene able.
<i>Has podido,</i>	Thou hast beene able.
<i>Ha podido, &amp;c.</i>	He hath beene able, &c.

## Pluperfect.

<i>To auia podido,</i>	I had beene able.
<i>Auias podido, &amp;c.</i>	Thou hadst beene able, &c.

## Future.

<i>To podré,</i>	I shall or will be able.
<i>Podrás,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt be able.
<i>Podrá,</i>	He shall or will be able.
<i>Podrémos,</i>	We shall or will be able.
<i>Podréys,</i>	Ye shall or will be able.
<i>Podrán,</i>	They shall or will be able.

*This Verbe hath not the Imperative.*

*Optative Future, and Present of the Subiunctive.*

## Aunque,

## Although.

<i>To pueda,</i>	I may or can, or I be able.
<i>Puedas,</i>	Thou maist or canst, or thou beest able.
<i>Pueda,</i>	He may or can, or hee be able.
<i>Podámos,</i>	Wee may or can, or we be able.
<i>Podáys,</i>	Yee may or can, or ye be able.
<i>Puedan,</i>	They may or can, or they be able.

## Imperfect.

## Imperfect.

<i>Aunque,</i>	Although.
<i>To pudiesse, Pudiesse,</i>	I might or could, or I were able.
<i>ra, &amp;c.</i>	Thou mightst or couldst, or thou wert able.
<i>Pudiesse,</i>	He might or could, or he were able.
<i>Pudiessemos,</i>	We might or could, or we were able.
<i>Pudiesse des,</i>	Ye might or could, or ye were able.
<i>Pudiesse n,</i>	They might or could, or they were able.

## Perfect.

## Although.

<i>To áya podido,</i>	I haue beene able.
<i>Ayas podido, &amp;c.</i>	Thou hast beene able, &c.

## 2. Perfect.

## When,

<i>Quando,</i>	I haue beene able.
<i>To úne podido,</i>	Thou hast beene able, &c.
<i>Vuiste podido, &amp;c.</i>	

## Pluperfect.

## Although.

<i>Aunque,</i>	Although.
<i>To pudiesse,</i>	I had beene able.
<i>Pudiesse,</i>	Thou hadst beene able.
<i>Pudiesse,</i>	He had beene able.
<i>Pudiessemos,</i>	We had beene able.
<i>Pudiesse des,</i>	Ye had beene able.
<i>Pudiesse n,</i>	They had beene able.

## Likewise

Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,  
and as followeth.

To <i>vuiesse</i> & <i>vuiera</i> <i>podí lo,</i>	I would or should haue beene able.
<i>Vuieses</i> & <i>vuieras</i> <i>podido, &amp;c.</i>	Thou wouldst or shouldst haue beene able, &c.

*Uncertaine Tense.*

To <i>podría,</i>	I might or could, or I should be able.
<i>Podrías,</i>	Thou mightst or couldst, or thou shouldst be able.
<i>Podría,</i>	Hee might or could, or he should be able.
<i>Podríamos,</i>	We might or could, or we should be able.
<i>Podríades,</i>	Yee might or could, or yee should be able.
<i>Podrían,</i>	They might or could, or they should be able.

*Future.*

<i>Quando, Si,</i>	When, If.
To <i>pudiere,</i>	I shall or will be able, I may or can.
<i>Pudieses,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt be able, Thou maist or canst.
<i>Pudiere,</i>	Hee shall or will be able, He may or can.
<i>Pudiéremos,</i>	We shall or will be able, We may or can.
<i>Pudiéredes,</i>	Ye shall or will be able, Ye may or can.
<i>Pudieren,</i>	They shall or will be able, They may or can.

*After*

*After the Future.*

<i>Quando, después que, Si,</i>	When, After that, If.
To <i>vuiera</i> <i>podido,</i>	I shall haue beene able, I haue beene able.
<i>Vuieres</i> <i>podido, &amp;c.</i>	Thou shalt haue beene able, Thou hast beene able, &c.

*Infinitive.*

Present. <i>Podér,</i>	To may or can, or to be able.
Perfect. <i>Aver</i> <i>podido,</i>	To haue beene able.
Future. <i>Estár</i> <i>por</i> <i>podér,</i>	To be to be able.
Gerund. <i>Pudiendo,</i>	Being able.

The declining of the Verbe *Hazér,* to doe, or  
make; but I will English it only, to doe.

*Indicative Mood, Present Tense.*

To <i>hago,</i>	I doe.
<i>Hazes,</i>	Thou doest.
<i>Haze,</i>	He doth.
<i>Hazémos,</i>	We doe.
<i>Hazéys,</i>	Ye doe.
<i>Hazen,</i>	They doe.

*Imperfect.*

To <i>hazía,</i>	I did doe.
<i>Hazías,</i>	Thou didst doe.
<i>Hazía,</i>	He did doe.
<i>Hazíamos,</i>	We did doe.
<i>Hazíades,</i>	Ye did doe.
<i>Hazían,</i>	They did doe.

*1. Perfect.*

## 1. Perfect.

Yo hice,	I did.
Hiciste,	Thou didst.
Hizo,	He did.
Hicimos,	We did.
Hicistes,	Ye did.
Hicieron,	They did.

## 2. Perfect.

Yo he hecho,	I have done.
Has hecho,	Thou hast done.
Ha hecho, &c.	He hath done, &c.

## Pluperfect.

Yoavia hecho,	I had done.
Avias hecho, &c.	Thou hadst done, &c.

## Future.

Yo haré,	I shall or will doe.
Harás,	Thou shalt or wilt doe.
Hará,	He shall or will doe.
Harémos,	We shall or will doe.
Haréis,	Ye shall or will doe.
Harán,	They shall or will doe.

## 2. Future.

Yo he & tengo de hacer, &c.	I shall, will, must, or ought to doe, &c.
-----------------------------	---

## Imperative.

Haz tu,	Doethou.
Haga aquél,	Let him doe.
Hagámosnosotros,	Let vs doe.
Haced vosotros,	Doe yee.
Hagan aquéllos,	Let them doe.

Optative

## Optative Future, and Present of the Subjunctive.

Aunque,

Although.

Oxala  
Yo haga,  
Hagas,  
Haga,  
Hagámos,  
Hagáis,  
Hagan,

I doe.  
Thou doest.  
He doeth.  
We doe.  
Ye doe.  
They doe.

## Imperfect.

Aunque,

Although.

Oxala  
Yo hiziese, hiziera, &c.  
Hizieses,  
Hiziese,  
Hiziessemos,  
Hiziesseis,  
Hiziesen,

I did.  
Thou diddest.  
He did.  
We did.  
Ye did.  
They did.

## Perfect.

Aunque,

Although.

Oxala  
Yo áya hecho,  
áyas hecho, &c.

I pray God  
I have done.  
Thou hast done, &c.

## 2. Perfect.

Quando,

When.

Yo úue hecho,  
Vnieste hecho, &c.

I have done.  
Thou hast done, &c.  
Pluperfect.

*Pluperfect.*

*Aunque,*

*Although.*

*Oxala*  
*To hiziera,*  
*Hizieras,*  
*Hiziera,*  
*Hizieramos,*  
*Hizierades,*  
*Hizieran,*

*Would to God*  
*I had done.*  
*Thou hadst done.*  
*He had done.*  
*We had done.*  
*Ye had done.*  
*They had done.*

*Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,*  
*and as followeth.*

*To vniéſſe & vniéra* *I would or should haue*  
*hécho, &c.* *done, &c.*

*Uncertaine Tenſe.*

*To haria,*  
*Harías,*

*I should or would doe.*  
*Thou shouldst or wouldst*  
*doe.*

*Haría,*  
*Haríamos,*  
*Haríades,*  
*Harían,*

*He should or would doe.*  
*We should or would doe.*  
*Ye should or would doe.*  
*They should or would doe.*

*Future of the Subiunctiue.*

*Quando, Si,*

*When, If.*

*To hiziere,*  
*Hizieres,*

*I shall or will doe, I doe.*  
*Thou shalt or wilt doe,*  
*Thou doest.*

*Hiziere,*

*Hee shall or will doe, He*  
*doth.*

*Hizieremos,*

*We shall or will doe, We*  
*doe.*

*Hizieredes,*

*Hizieredes,*  
*Hizieren,*

*Ye shall or will doe, Ye doe.*  
*They shall or will doe, They*  
*doe.*

*After the Future.*

*Quando, Si,*

*When, If.*

*To vniére hécho,*

*I shall haue done, I haue*  
*done.*

*Vniéres hécho, &c.*

*Thou shalt haue done, Thou*  
*hast done.*

*Infinitiue.*

*Present. Hazér,*

*To doe.*

*Perfect. Auér hécho,*

*To haue done.*

*Future. Estár pór hazér,*

*To be to doe.*

*Gerund. Haziéndo,*

*Doing.*

*The declining of the Verbe Ponér, to Put.*

*Indicatiue Mood, Present Tenſe.*

*To Pongo,*  
*Pones,*  
*Pone,*  
*Ponémos,*  
*Ponéys,*  
*Ponen,*

*I doe put.*  
*Thou doest put.*  
*He doth put.*  
*We doe put.*  
*Ye doe put.*  
*They doe put.*

*Imperfect.*

*To ponía,*  
*Ponías,*  
*Ponía,*  
*Poníamos,*  
*Poníades,*  
*Ponían,*

*I did put.*  
*Thou didst put.*  
*He did put.*  
*We did put.*  
*Ye did put.*  
*They did put.*

*1. Perfect.*

## 1. Perfect.

To Púse,	I put.
Pusiste,	Thou putst.
Púso,	He put.
Pusimos,	We put.
Pusistes,	Ye put.
Pusieron,	They put.

## 2. Perfect.

To he púesto,	I haue put.
Has púesto, &c.	Thou hast put, &c.

## Pluperfect.

To auia púesto,	I had put.
Auias púesto, &c.	Thou hadst put, &c.

## Future.

To pondré & porné,	I shall or will put.
Pondrás & pornás,	Thou shalt or wilt put.
Pondrá & porná,	He shall or will put.
Pondremos & pornemos,	We shall or will put.
Pondréys & pornéys,	Ye shall or will put.
Pondrán & pornán,	They shall or will put.

## 2. Future.

To he & tengo de poner, &c.	I shall, will, must, or ought to put.
-----------------------------	---------------------------------------

## Imperative.

Pon tu,	Put thou.
Ponga aquél,	Let him put.
Pongámos,	Let vs put.
Poned,	Put ye.
Pongan,	Let them put.

Optative

## Optative Future, and Present of the Subiunctive.

Aunque,

Although.

Oxala  
To póngá,  
Póngas,  
Póngá,  
Pongámos,  
Pongáys,  
Póngan,

I put.  
Thou puttest.  
He putterth.  
We put.  
Ye put.  
They put.

## Imperfect.

Aunque,

Although.

Oxala  
To pusiesse, pusiera, &c.  
Pusieses,  
Pusiesse,  
Pusiessemos,  
Pusiesse des,  
Pusiesssen,

I did put.  
Thou didst put.  
He did put.  
We did put.  
Ye did put.  
They did put.

## Perfect.

Aunque,

Although.

Oxala  
To áya púesto,  
Ayas púesto, &c.

I pray God  
I haue put.  
Thou hast put, &c.

## The second Perfect.

Quando,

When.

To úne púesto,  
Vuieste púesto, &c.

I haue put.  
Thou hast put.  
I

Pluperfect.

## Pluperfect.

Aunque,

Although.

Oxala	To pusiera,	Would to God	I had put.
	Pusieras,		Thou hadst put.
	Pusiera,		He had put.
	Pusiéramos,		We had put.
	Pusiérades,		Ye had put.
	Pusiéran,		They had put.

Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,  
and as followeth.

To vuiéſſe & vuiéra puéſto,	I would or should haue put.
Vuiéſſes & vuiéras puéſto, &c.	Thou wouldst or shouldst haue put, &c.

## Uncertaine Tense.

To pondria & pornia,	I should or would put.
Pondrias & pornias,	Thou shouldst or wouldst put.
Pondria & pornia,	He should or would put.
Pondriamos & pornia- mos,	We should or would put.
Pondriades & porniades,	Ye should or would put.
Pondrian & pornian,	They should or would put.

## Future of the Subiunctive.

Quando, Si,

When, If.

To pusiere,	I shall or will put, I put.
Pusieres,	Thou shalt or wilt put, thou puttest.
Pusiere,	He shall or will put, he putteth.
Pusiéremos,	We shall or will put, we put.

*Pusiéredes,*

Pusiéredes,	Ye shall or will put, ye put.
Pusiéren,	They shall or will put, they put.

## After the Future.

Quando, Si,

When, If.

To vuiére puéſto,	I shall haue put, I haue put.
Vuiéres puéſto, &c.	Thou shalt haue put, thou hast put.

## Infinitive.

Present.	Poner,	To put.
Perfect.	Auer puéſto,	To haue put.
Future.	Estár por poner,	To be to put.
Gerund.	Poniéndo,	Putting.

The declining of the Verbe *Sabér*, to Know.

## Indicative Mood, Present Tense.

To sé,	I know.
Sábes,	Thou knowest.
Sábe,	He knoweth.
Sabemos,	We know.
Sabéis,	Ye know.
Sabén,	They know.

## Imperfect.

To sabia,	I did know.
Sabias,	Thou didst know.
Sabia,	He did know.
Sabíamos,	We did know.
Sabíades,	Ye did know.
Sabían,	They did know.

I 2

First



*First Perfect.*

<i>To supe,</i>	I knew.
<i>Supiste,</i>	Thou knewst.
<i>Supo,</i>	He knew.
<i>Supimos,</i>	We knew.
<i>Supistes,</i>	Ye knew.
<i>Supieron,</i>	They knew.

*Second Perfect.*

<i>To he sabido,</i>	I haue knowne.
<i>Has sabido, &amp;c.</i>	Thou hast knowne, &c.

*Pluperfect.*

<i>To auia sabido,</i>	I had knowne.
<i>Auias sabido, &amp;c.</i>	Thou hadst knowne, &c.

*Future.*

<i>To sabré,</i>	I shall or will know.
<i>Sabrás,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt know.
<i>Sabrá,</i>	He shall or will know.
<i>Sabremos,</i>	We shall or will know.
<i>Sabréys,</i>	Ye shall or will know.
<i>Sabrán,</i>	They shall or will know.

*2. Future.*

<i>To he &amp; tengo de saber,</i> <i>&amp;c.</i>	I shall, will, must, or ought to know, &c.
--	---

*Imperative.*

<i>Sábe tu, sépas,</i>	Know thou.
<i>Sépa aquél,</i>	Let him know.
<i>Sepámos nosotros,</i>	Let vs know.
<i>Sabed vosotros,</i>	Know ye.
<i>Sépan aquéllos,</i>	Let them know.

*Optative*

*Optative Future, and Present of the Subiunctive.*

*Aunque,*

*To sépa,*  
*Sépas,*  
*Oxala Sépa,*  
*Sepámos,*  
*Sepáys,*  
*Sépan,*

*Although.*

I know.  
Thou knowest.  
He knoweth.  
We know.  
Ye know.  
They know.

*Imperfect.*

*Aunque,*

*To supiéssse, supiéra, &c.*  
*Supiésses,*  
*Oxala, &c. Supiéssse,*  
*Supiésssemos,*  
*Supiésssedes,*  
*Supiésssen,*

*Although.*

I knew or did know.  
Thou knewest or didst  
know.  
He knew or did know.  
We knew or did know  
Ye knew or did know.  
they knew or did know

*Perfect.*

*Aunque,*

*To áya sabido,*  
*Áyas sabido, &c.*  
*Pléga á Dios*

*Although.*

I haue knowne.  
Thou hast knowne.

*Second Perfect.*

*Quando,*  
*To úue sabido,*  
*Vnieste sabido, &c.*

*When.*

I haue knowne.  
Thou hast knowne, &c.  
I 3 *Pluperfect.*

*Pluperfect.*

<i>Aunque,</i>	Although.
<i>To supiera,</i>	I had knowne.
<i>Supieras,</i>	Thou hadst knowne.
<i>Supiera,</i>	
<i>Supiéramos,</i>	
<i>Supierades,</i>	
<i>Supieran,</i>	

*Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,*  
*and as followeth.*

*To vniéſſe & vniéra* I would or should haue  
*ſabido,* knowne.  
*Vniéſſes & vniéras* Thou wouldst or shouldst  
*ſabido, &c.* haue knowne, &c.

*Uncertaine Tense.*

<i>To ſabría,</i>	I should or would know.
<i>Sabrias,</i>	Thou shouldst or wouldst know.
<i>Sabria,</i>	He should or would know.
<i>Sabríamos,</i>	We should or would know.
<i>Sabriades,</i>	Ye should or would know.
<i>Sabrían,</i>	They should or would know.

*Future of the Subiunctive.*

<i>Quando, Si,</i>	When, If.
<i>To ſupiere,</i>	I shall or will know.
<i>Supieres,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt know.
<i>Supiere,</i>	He shall or will know.
<i>Supiéremos,</i>	We shall or will know.
<i>Supiéredes,</i>	Ye shall or will know.
<i>Supieren,</i>	They shall or will know.

*After*

*After the Future.*

<i>Quando, Si,</i>	When, If.
<i>To vniére ſabido,</i>	I shall haue knowne, I haue knowne.
<i>Vniéres ſabido, &amp;c.</i>	Thou shalt haue knowne, Thou hast knowne, &c.

*Infinitive.*

Present.	<i>Sabér,</i>	To know.
Perfect.	<i>Anér ſabido,</i>	To haue knowne.
Future.	<i>Eſtár por ſabér,</i>	To be to know.
	<i>Anér de ſabér,</i>	To ought to know.
Gerund.	<i>Sabiendo,</i>	Knowing.

The declining of the Verbe *Traér*, which signi-  
 feth both to Bring, and wearc apparell.

*Indicative Present.*

<i>To tráigo,</i>	I bring.
<i>Traes,</i>	Thou bringest.
<i>Tráe,</i>	He bringeth.
<i>Traemos,</i>	We bring.
<i>Traéis,</i>	Ye bring.
<i>Tráen,</i>	They bring.

*Imperfect.*

<i>To traya,</i>	I did bring.
<i>Trayas,</i>	Thou didst bring.
<i>Traya,</i>	He did bring.
<i>Trayamos,</i>	We did bring.
<i>Trayades,</i>	Ye did bring.
<i>Trayan,</i>	They did bring.

I 4

*Perfect.*

1. *Perfect.*

<i>Yo truxé,</i>	I brought.
<i>Truxiste,</i>	Thou broughtest.
<i>Truxo,</i>	He brought.
<i>Truximos,</i>	We brought.
<i>Truxistes,</i>	Ye brought.
<i>Truxéron,</i>	They brought.

Some doe write *tráxe*, changing the *u* into *a*, throughout all the persons.

2. *Perfect.*

<i>Yo he traydo,</i>	I haue brought.
<i>Has traydo, &amp;c.</i>	Thou hast brought, &c.

*Pluperfect.*

<i>Yo auia traydo,</i>	I had brought.
<i>Auias traydo, &amp;c.</i>	Thou hadst brought, &c.

*Future.*

<i>Traeré,</i>	I shall or will bring.
<i>Traerás,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt bring.
<i>Traerá,</i>	He shall or will bring.
<i>Traerémos,</i>	We shall or will bring.
<i>Traeréys,</i>	Ye shall or will bring.
<i>Traerán,</i>	They shall or will bring.

2. *Future.*

<i>Yo he &amp; tengo de traer, &amp;c.</i>	I shall, will, must, or ought to bring, &c.
--	---

*Imperative.*

<i>Tráctu,</i>	Bring thou.
<i>Tráyga aquél,</i>	Let him bring.

*Traygámos*

<i>Traygámosnosótro,</i>	Let vs bring.
<i>Traed vosótro.</i>	Bring ye.
<i>Tráygan aquéllos,</i>	Let them bring.

*Optative Future, and Present of the Subiunctive.*

<i>Aunque,</i>	Although.
<i>Yo tráya,</i>	I bring.
<i>Tráygas,</i>	Thou bringest.
<i>Tráyga,</i>	He bringeth.
<i>Traygámos,</i>	We bring.
<i>Traygáis,</i>	Ye bring.
<i>Tráygan,</i>	They bring.

*Imperfect.*

<i>Aunque,</i>	Although.
<i>Yo truxéſſe truxéſſera, &amp;c.</i>	I brought or did bring.
<i>Truxéſſes,</i>	Thou broughtst or didst bring.
<i>Truxéſſe,</i>	He brought or did bring.
<i>Truxéſſemos,</i>	We brought or did bring.
<i>Truxéſſedes,</i>	Ye brought or did bring.
<i>Truxéſſen,</i>	They brought or did bring.

It is also many times read *traxéſſe*, changing the *u* into *a*, as I haue said before.

*Perfect.*

<i>Aunque,</i>	Although.
<i>Yo áya traydo,</i>	I haue brought.
<i>Áyas traydo, &amp;c.</i>	Thou hast brought, &c.

2. *Perfect.*

## 2. Perfect.

<i>Quando,</i>	When.
<i>To áue traydo,</i>	I haue brought.
<i>Vuiste traydo, &amp;c.</i>	Thou hast brought, &c.

## Pluperfect.

<i>Aunque,</i>	Although.
<i>To truxéra,</i>	God I had brought.
<i>Truxéras,</i>	God Thou hadst brought.
<i>Truxéra,</i>	God He had brought.
<i>Truxéramos,</i>	Would We had brought.
<i>Truxérades,</i>	Would Ye had brought.
<i>Truxéran,</i>	Would They had brought.

*Traxérais* is also found in many Authors.

*Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this, and as followeth.*

<i>To vniéſſe &amp; vniéra traydo,</i>	I would or should haue brought.
<i>Vniéſſes &amp; vniéras traydo, &amp;c.</i>	Thou wouldst or shouldst haue brought, &c.

## Uncertain tense.

<i>To traeríá,</i>	I should or would bring.
<i>Traerías,</i>	Thou shouldst or wouldst bring.
<i>Traeríá,</i>	He should or would bring.
<i>Traeríamos,</i>	We should or would bring.
<i>Traeríades,</i>	Ye should or would bring.
<i>Traerían,</i>	They should or would bring.

## Future.

<i>Quando, Si,</i>	When, If.
<i>To truxére,</i>	I shall or will bring, I bring.
	<i>Truxéres,</i>

<i>Truxéres,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt bring, Thou bringest.
<i>Truxére,</i>	He shall or will bring, He bringeth.
<i>Truxéremos,</i>	We shall or will bring, We bring.
<i>Truxéredes,</i>	Ye shall or will bring, Ye bring.
<i>Truxéren,</i>	They shall or will bring, They bring.
There is often found <i>Traxere</i> for <i>Truxere</i> .	

## After the Future.

<i>Quando, Si,</i>	When, If.
<i>To vniére traydo,</i>	I shall haue brought, I haue brought.
<i>Vniéres traydo, &amp;c.</i>	Thou shalt haue brought, Thou hast brought, &c.

## Infinitive.

<i>Traér,</i>	To bring.
<i>Aué Trá'do,</i>	To haue brought.
<i>Estár por traér,</i>	To be to bring.
<i>Trayéndo,</i>	Bringing.

The declining of the Verbe *Cabér*.

This Verbe *Cabér*, for that it hath diuers significations, is somewhat hard to be expressed in English: for it signifieth sometimes to be contained or to goe into a thing; as, *Tóda el água no cábe en el jarro*, All the water will not be contained or goe into the pot. Sometimes it is to happen, or fall to ones lot or share; as, *Esto me cábe por mi parte*, This falleth to me for my part. *Esto me cúpo en suérte*, This came or fell to me by lot, that is to say, I haue had this by fortune. This Verbe is moreouer otherwise applied, and must be vnderstood by the words annexed vnto it: as almost at the beginning of *Celestine*, *Cómo cúpo en ingenio de tal hombre cómo tu?* How hath it entred into the

the minde of such a man as thou? In *Torquemellas Jardin de flores*, are these phrases, *Entre nosotros bien cabe*, fol. 119. It is well accepted and received amongst vs. *Los Moscovitas les cabe su parte*, 464. The Moscovites haue their part of them. *Esto es engañ que no puede caber en gente de razón*, fol. 503. This deceit or subtletie hath no place amongst men of reason. *En que injuzio cabe?* Into what iudgement can it sinke?

*Indicative Present.*

*To quépo,*  
*Cábes,*  
*Cábe,*  
*Cabémos,*  
*Cabéys,*  
*Cáben,*

I am contained, &c. with the  
Verbe, I am.

*Imperfect.*

*To cabia,*  
*Cabias,*  
*Cabia,*  
*Cabíamos,*  
*Cabiades,*  
*Cabían,*

I was contained, &c.

*First Perfect.*

*To cúpe,*  
*Cupiste,*  
*Cúpo,*  
*Cupimos,*  
*Cupistes,*  
*Cupieron,*

I was or haue beene contained,  
&c.

*2. Perfect.**2. Perfect.*

*To he cabido,*  
*Has cabido, &c.*

I haue beene contained, &c.

*Pluperfect.*

*To auia cabido, &c.* I had beene contained, &c.

*Future.*

*To cabré,*  
*Cabrás,*  
*Cabrá,*  
*Cabrémos,*  
*Cabréys,*  
*Cabrán,*

I shall or will be contained, &c.

*2. Future.*

*To he & tengo de*  
*cabér, &c.*

I shall, will, must, or ought to  
be contained, &c.

*This Verbe wanteth the Imperative.*

*Optative Future, and Present of the*  
*Subiunctive.*

*Aunque,*

*Although.*

*To quépa,*  
*Quépas,*  
*Quépa,*  
*Quepámos,*  
*Quepáys,*  
*Quépan,*

*I be contained.*  
*Thou beest contained, &c.*

*God grant*

*Imperfect.*

*Imperfect.*

<i>Aunque,</i>		Although.
<i>Oxala</i>	To cupiéſſe, Cupiéra, &c.	I were contained.
	Cupiéſſes,	Thou wert contained.
	Cupiéſſe,	He was contained, &c.
	Cupiéſſemos,	
	Cupiéſſedes,	
	Cupiéſſen,	
	Would to God	

*Perfect.*

<i>Aunque,</i>		Although.
<i>Oxala</i>	To áya cabído, &c.	I have bin contained, &c.
	I pray God	
	2. <i>Perfect.</i>	

<i>Quando,</i>	When.
To íue cabído,	I have beene contained.
Vuíſte cabído, &c.	Thou haſt bin contained, &c.

*Pluperfect.*

<i>Aunque,</i>		Although.
<i>Oxala</i>	To cupiéra,	I had beene contained.
	Cupiéras,	Thou hadſt beene contained.
	Cupiéra,	He had beene contained, &c.
	Cupiéramos,	
	Cupiérades,	
	Cupiéran,	
	Would to God	

*Likewiſe*

*Likewiſe with the auxiliar, Engliſhed like this, and as followeth.*

To vuiéſſe & vuiéra	I would, or ſhould have beene contained.
cabído,	
Vuiéſſes & vuiéras	Thou wouldſt, or ſhouldſt have beene contained, &c.
cabído, &c.	

*Uncertaine tenſe.*

To cabría,	I ſhould or would be contained.
Cabrias,	Thou ſhouldſt or wouldſt be contained, &c.
Cabría,	
Cabríamos,	
Cabríades,	
Cabrían,	

*Future.*

<i>Quando, Si,</i>	When, If.
To cupiére,	I ſhall or will be contained.
Cupiéres,	Thou ſhalt or wilt be contained, &c.
Cupiére,	
Cupiéremos,	
Cupiéredes,	
Cupiéren,	

*After the Future.*

<i>Quando, Si,</i>	When, If.
To vuiére cabído,	I ſhall have beene contained.
Vuiéres cabído, &c.	Thou ſhalt have beene contained, &c.

*Infinitive.*

Cabér,	To be contained.
Auéer cabído,	To have beene contained.
	<i>Eſtar</i>

<i>Estár por cabér,</i>	To be able to be contained.
<i>Anér de cabér,</i>	To ought to be contained.
<i>Cabiéndo,</i>	Being contained.

The Verbe *Veér*, differeth in nothing from *Leér* aboute coniugated, sauing that it often loseth the first *e* in the Infinitive, being written *vér*. and maketh his participle *visto*, and not *veyto*. There is many times found in the first and third person singular of the Perfect in the Indicative, *vide*, and *vido*, in stead of *vi* and *vió*.

The Verbe *Valér* which is in the Indicative *valgo*, maketh in the future Tense of the same mood, *valdré, valdrás, valdrá, valdrémos, valdréys, valdrán*.

The declining of the Verbe *Dezir*, to say, or tell.

#### Indicative present.

<i>To digo,</i>	I say.
<i>Dizes,</i>	Thou saiest.
<i>Dize,</i>	He saith.
<i>Dezimos,</i>	We say.
<i>Dezis,</i>	Ye say.
<i>Dizen,</i>	They say.

#### Imperfect.

<i>To dezía,</i>	I did say.
<i>Dezias,</i>	Thou didst say.
<i>Dezia,</i>	He did say.
<i>Dezíamos,</i>	We did say.
<i>Deziades,</i>	Ye did say.
<i>Dezían,</i>	They did say.

#### 1. Perfect.

#### 1. Perfect.

<i>To díxe,</i>	I said.
<i>Dixiste,</i>	Thou saidst.
<i>Dixo,</i>	He said.
<i>Diximos,</i>	We said.
<i>Dixistes,</i>	Ye said.
<i>Dixéron,</i>	They said.

#### 2. Perfect.

<i>To he dicho,</i>	I haue said.
<i>Has dicho, &amp;c.</i>	Thou hast said, &c.

#### Pluperfect.

<i>To auía dicho,</i>	I had said.
<i>Auías dicho, &amp;c.</i>	Thou hadst said, &c.

#### Future.

<i>To diré,</i>	I shall or will say.
<i>Dirás,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt say.
<i>Dirá,</i>	He shall or will say.
<i>Dirémos,</i>	We shall or will say.
<i>Diréys,</i>	Ye shall or will say.
<i>Dirán,</i>	They shall or will say.

#### 2. Future.

<i>To he &amp; tengo de dezir, &amp;c.</i>	I shall, will, must, or ought to say, &c.
--	---

#### Imperative.

<i>Di tu, diga aquél,</i>	Say thou, Let him say.
<i>Digámos nosotros,</i>	Let vs say.
<i>Dezid vosotros,</i>	Say yee.
<i>Digan aquéllos,</i>	Let them say.

#### K

#### Optative

<i>Aunque,</i>	Although.
<i>To diga,</i>	I say.
<i>Digas,</i>	Thou sayest.
<i>Diga,</i>	He saith.
<i>Digamos,</i>	We say.
<i>Digays,</i>	Ye say.
<i>Digan,</i>	They say.

*Imperfect.*

<i>Aunque,</i>	Although.
<i>To dixesse, dixera, &amp;c.</i>	I said or did say.
<i>Dixesses,</i>	Thou saidst or didst say.
<i>Dixesse,</i>	He said or did say.
<i>Dixéssimos,</i>	We said or did say.
<i>Dixéssedes,</i>	Ye said or did say.
<i>Dixéssen,</i>	They said or did say.

*Perfect.*

<i>Aunque,</i>	Although.
<i>To áya dicho,</i>	I haue said.
<i>Ayas dicho, &amp;c.</i>	Thou hast said, &c.

*2. Perfect.*

<i>Quando,</i>	When.
<i>To úue dicho,</i>	I haue said.
<i>Vuiste dicho, &amp;c.</i>	Thou hast said, &c.

*Pluperfect.*

<i>Aunque,</i>	Although.
<i>To dixera,</i>	I had said.
<i>Dixeras,</i>	Thou hadst said.
<i>Dixera,</i>	He had said, &c.
<i>Dixéramos,</i>	
<i>Dixérades,</i>	
<i>Dixéran,</i>	

*Likewise*

*Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,  
and as followeth.*

<i>To uniesse &amp; uniera di- cho,</i>	I would or should haue said.
<i>Uniesse &amp; unieras di- cho, &amp;c.</i>	Thou wouldst or shouldst haue said, &c.

*Uncertaine Tense.*

<i>To diria,</i>	I should or would say.
<i>Dirias,</i>	Thou shouldst or wouldst say.
<i>Diria,</i>	He should or would say, &c.
<i>Diriamos,</i>	
<i>Diriades,</i>	
<i>Dirian,</i>	

*Future.*

<i>Quando, Si,</i>	When, If.
<i>To dixere,</i>	I shall or will say, I say.
<i>Dixeres,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt say, Thou sayest.
<i>Dixere,</i>	He shall or will say, He saith.
<i>Dixéremos,</i>	We shall or will say, We say.
<i>Dixéredes,</i>	Ye shall or will say, Ye say.
<i>Dixéren,</i>	They shall or will say, They say.

*After the Future.*

<i>Quando, Si,</i>	When, If.
<i>To uniere dicho,</i>	I shall haue said, I haue said.
<i>Vuieres dicho, &amp;c.</i>	Thou shalt haue said, Thou hast said, &c.

*Infinitive.*

<i>Dezir,</i>	To say.
<i>Anér dicho,</i>	To haue said.
<i>Estár por dezir,</i>	To be to say.
<i>Anér de dezir,</i>	To ought to say.
<i>Diziendo,</i>	Saying.



The declining of the Verbes *Dormir* and *Morir*, which for that they are both of one Coniugation, and doe in euery thing very much agree, shall be coniugated both together.

## Indicative Present.

<i>To duérmo, muéro,</i>	I sleepe, I die.
<i>Duérmes, muéres,</i>	Thou sleepest, thou diest.
<i>Duérame, muérame,</i>	He sleepeeth, he dieth.
<i>Dormimos, morimos,</i>	We sleepe, we die.
<i>Dormís, morís,</i>	Ye sleepe, ye die.
<i>Duérmen, muéren,</i>	They sleepe, they die.

## Imperfect.

<i>To dormía, moría,</i>	I did sleepe, I did die.
<i>Dormías, morías,</i>	Thou didst sleepe, thou didst die.
<i>Dormía, moría,</i>	He did sleepe, he did die.
<i>Dormíamos, moríamos,</i>	We did sleepe, we did die.
<i>Dormíades, moríades,</i>	Ye did sleepe, ye did die.
<i>Dormían, morían,</i>	They did sleepe, they did die.

## 1. Perfect.

<i>To dormí, morí,</i>	I slept, I died.
<i>Dormiste, moriste,</i>	Thou sleepest, thou diedst.
<i>Durmió, murió,</i>	He slept, he died.
<i>Durmimos, murimos,</i>	We slept, we died.
<i>Durmistes, muristes,</i>	Ye slept, ye died.
<i>Durmiéron, murieron,</i>	They slept, they died.

## 2. Perfect.

<i>To he dormido, muerto,</i>	I haue slept, I haue died,
<i>&amp;c.</i>	<i>&amp;c.</i>

## Pluperfect.

## Pluperfect.

*To auia dormido, muerto,* I had slept, I had died,  
*&c.* *&c.*

It is to be noted that *Morir* maketh his Participle *muerto*, and taketh *ser* for an auxiliar. Sometimes it is vsed in the actiue signification, as in the Italian Language, and signifieth killed; as *El ha muerto a un hombre*, He hath killed a man.

## Future.

<i>To dormiré, moriré,</i>	I shall or will sleepe, I shall or will die, &c.
<i>Dormirás, morirás,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt sleepe.
<i>Dormirá, morirá,</i>	He shall or will sleepe.
<i>Dormiremos, moriremos,</i>	We shall or will sleepe.
<i>Dormiréis, morireis,</i>	Ye shall or will sleepe.
<i>Dormirán, morirán,</i>	They shall or will sleepe.

## 2. Future.

*To he & tengo de dormir,* I shall, will, must, or ought  
*morir, &c.* to sleepe, to die, &c.

## Imperative.

<i>Duérme tu, muere tu,</i>	Sleepe thou, die thou.
<i>Duerma aquél, muera aquél,</i>	Let him sleepe, let him die.
<i>Durmámos, murámos nosotros,</i>	Let vs sleepe, let vs die.
<i>Dormid, morid vosotros,</i>	Sleepe ye, die ye.
<i>Duerman, muéran aquéllos,</i>	Let them sleepe, let them die.

Optative Future, and Present of the  
Subjunctive.

Aunque,

Although.

Yo duerma, muera,

I sleepe, I die.

Duermas, mueras,

Thou sleepest, thou diest.

Duerma, muera,

He sleepe, he dieth.

Durmámos, murámos,

We sleepe, we die.

Durmáys, muráys,

Ye sleepe, ye die.

Duerman, muéran,

They sleepe, they die.

## Imperfect.

Aunque,

Although.

Yo durmiese, muriese,

I slept or did sleepe.

durmiere, muriera,

I died or did die,

&amp;c.

&amp;c.

Durmieses, murieses,

Thou sleepest, or didst  
sleepe.

Durmiese, muriese,

He slept or did sleepe.

Durmiesemos, muries-

We slept or did sleepe.

emos,

Durmiesedes, muries-

Ye slept or did sleepe.

sedes,

Durmiesen, muriesen,

They slept or did sleep.

## Perfect.

Aunque,

Although.

Yo áya dormido, &amp;c.

I haue slept, &amp;c.

## 2. Perfect.

Quando,

When,

Yo áue dormido, &amp;c.

I haue slept, &amp;c.

## Pluperfect.

## Pluperfect.

Aunque,

Although.

Yo durmiera, muriera,

I had slept, I had  
died

Durmieras, murieras,

Thou hadst slept,  
thou hadst died.

Durmiera, muriera,

Hee had slept, he  
had died.

Durmieramos, murieramos,

We had slept, we  
had died.

Durmierades, murierades,

Yee had slept, ye  
had died.

Durmieran, murieran,

They had slept,  
they had died.Likewise with the auxiliar, Englished like this,  
and as followeth.Yo vuisse & viera  
dormido, &c.I would or should haue  
slept, &c.Yo fuisse & fuera  
muerto, &c.I had died, I would or  
should haue died, &c.

## Uncertaine Tense.

Yo dormiria, moriria,

I should or would sleepe, I  
should or would die, &c.

Dormiras, moriras,

Thou shouldst or wouldst  
sleepe.

Dormiria, moriria,

He should or would sleep

Dormiriamos, moririamos,

Wee should or would  
sleepe.

Dormirades, morirades,

Ye should or would sleep.

Dormirian, moririan,

They should or would  
sleepe.

K 4

Future.

*Future.*

<i>Quando, Si,</i>	<i>When, If.</i>
<i>To durmiere, muriere,</i>	I shall or will sleepe, I shall or will die, &c.
<i>Durmières, murières,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt sleepe.
<i>Durmiere, muriere,</i>	He shall or will sleepe.
<i>Durmiéremos, muriéremos,</i>	We shall or will sleepe.
<i>Durmiéredes, muriéredes,</i>	Ye shall or will sleepe.
<i>Durmiéren, muriéren,</i>	They shall or will sleepe.

*After the Future.*

<i>Quando, Si,</i>	<i>When, If.</i>
<i>Tu oviere dormido, &amp;c.</i>	I shall haue slept, I haue slept, &c.

<i>Quando, Si,</i>	<i>When, If.</i>
<i>To fuere muerto, &amp;c.</i>	I shall be dead, I am dead, &c.

*Infinitive.*

<i>Dormir, morir,</i>	To sleepe, to die.
<i>Auér dormido, sér muerto,</i>	To haue slept, to be dead.
<i>Auér de dormir, morir,</i>	To ought to sleepe, to die.
<i>Ser por dormir, morir,</i>	To be to sleepe, to die.
<i>Estár por dormir, morir,</i>	To be ready to sleep, to die.
<i>Durmiendo, muriendo,</i>	Sleeping, Dying.

*Morir* is construed with *me, te, se,* and is then an actiue as concerning the voice, taking *Hauér* for an auxiliar, but in the perfect it is seldome found but in the third person. It maketh also *To soy muerto,* I haue died,

The

*The declining of the Verbes yr and Andar.*

Which I will likewise coniugate together, for that their signification is alike, although they differ something in their vse, whereof I purpose to speake a word at the end.

*Indicative, Present.*

<i>Yo voy, ando,</i>	I goe.
<i>Vas andas,</i>	Thou goest.
<i>Va, anda,</i>	He goeth.
<i>Ymos or vámos, andámos,</i>	We goe.
<i>Ys or váys, andáys,</i>	Ye goe.
<i>Van, andan,</i>	They goe.

*Imperfect.*

<i>Yo yua, andáua,</i>	I did goe.
<i>Tuas, andáuas,</i>	Thou didst goe.
<i>Tua andáua,</i>	He did goe.
<i>Tuamos, andáuamos,</i>	We did goe.
<i>Tuades, andáuades,</i>	Ye did goe.
<i>Tuan, andáuar,</i>	They did goe.

*1. Perfect.*

<i>Yo fui or fué, andúue,</i>	I went.
<i>Fuiste or fuéste, anduiste,</i>	Thou wentest.
<i>Fué, andúuo,</i>	He went.
<i>Fuimos or fuémos, anduimos,</i>	We went.
<i>Fuistes or fuéstes, anduistes,</i>	Ye went.
<i>Fuéron, anduieron,</i>	They went.

I haue put downe *Fui* and *fué*, *Fuiste* and *fuéste*, *Fuimos* and *fuémos*, *Fuistes* and *fuéstes*, for that *Miranda* maketh a distinction betwene *Fué*, *fuéste*, *fuémos*,

*mos, fuéste*, which he saith to be of *yr*: and *Fui, fuiste, fuimos*, and *fuistes*, of *ser*. Notwithstanding I haue alwaies found *fui* and the rest, in the same signification of *fué*, and I doe not remember to haue read it otherwise.

2. *Perfect. And Pluperfect.*

*To he & auia sido,* I haue and had beene, I haue  
*andádo, &c.* and had gone, &c.

*Likewise.*

*To soy ydo,* I haue gone.  
*Tu eres ydo,* Thou hast gone.  
*El es ydo, el se ha ydo,* He hath gone.  
*Ellos han ydo,* They haue gone, &c.  
*Se han ydo,*  
*Ydos son,*

*Likewise.*

*To me auia ydo,* I had gone.  
*Tu te auias ydo,* Thou hadst gone.  
*El se auia ydo,* He had gone.  
*Nos auiamos ydo,* We had gone.  
*Os auiaades ydo,* Ye had gone.  
*Auian se ydo, or se auian ydo,* They had gone.

The Future of *Andár*, which is *Andaré*, is but seldome in vse.

*To yré,* I shall or will goe.  
*Trás,* Thou shalt or wilt goe.  
*Trá,* He shall or will goe.  
*Trémos,* We shall or will goe.  
*Tréis,* Ye shall or will goe.  
*Trán,* They shall or will goe.

2. *Future.*

2. *Future.*

*To he & tengo de yr, &c,* I shall, will, must, or ought to goe, &c.

*Imperative.*

*Ve tu, anda tu,* Goe thou.  
*Vaya aquel, anda aquel,* Let him goe.  
*Vamos, andémos nosotros,* Let vs goe.  
*Id, andad vosotros,* Goe ye.  
*Vayan, anden aquellos,* Let them goe.  
*Ve te de ay,* Get thee gone from thence

*Optative Future, and Present of the Subiunctive.*

*Aunque,*

*Although.*

*Oxala, &c.* *Y vaya, ande,* I goe.  
*Vayas, andes,* Thou goest.  
*Vaya, ande,* He goeth.  
*Vamos, andémos,* We goe.  
*Vays, andéys,* Ye goe.  
*Vayan, anden.* They goe.

*God grant*

*Imperfect.*

*Aunque,* *Although.*  
*To fuéssse, anduuiéssse, fuéssse, anduuiéssse, fuéssse, anduuiéssse, &c.* I went or did goe.

*Oxala, &c.* *Fuésses, anduuiésses,* Thou wentst or didst goe.  
*Fuéssse, anduuiéssse,* He went or did goe.  
*Fuésssemos, anduuiésssemos,* Wee went or did goe.  
*Fuésssedes, anduuiésssedes,* Ye went or did goe.  
*Fuéssen, anduuiéssen,* They went or did goe.

*Would to God*

*Perfect.*

## Perfect.

Aunque,

Although.

Oxala *To áya Sído, séa andádo,*  
*To séa ydo, &c.*

I pray God I haue beene : I haue gone, &c.

## Second Perfect.

Quando,

When.

*To úne sido, andádo, &c.* I haue beene, I haue gone, &c.

## Pluperfect.

Aunque,

Although.

Plaguiérase Dios *To fuérase, anduviérase,*  
*Fuérase, anduviérase,*  
*Fuéra, anduviéra,*  
*Fuéramos, anduviéramos,*  
*Fuérades, anduviérades,*  
*Fuéran, anduviéran,*

Would to God I had gone.  
 Thou hadst gone.  
 He had gone.  
 We had gone.  
 Ye had gone.  
 They had gone.

## Likewise.

*To fuéssse & fuéra, ydo, andádo, &c.* I had gone, I would or should haue gone, &c.  
*To vniéssse & vniéra, ydo, andádo, &c.* I had gone, I would or should haue gone.

## Uncertaine Tense.

*To yría, andaría,* I should or would goe.  
*Yrías, andarías,* Thou shouldst or wouldst goe.  
*Yría, andaría,* He should or would goe.  
*Yríamos, andaríamos,* We should or would goe.  
*Yríades, andaríades,* Ye should or would goe.  
*Yrían, andarían,* They should or would goe.

Future.

## Future.

Quando, Si,

When, If.

*To fuérese, anduviérese,* I shall or will goe, I goe.  
*Fuéres, anduviéres,* Thou shalt or wilt goe, Thou goest.  
*Fuere, anduviere,* He shal or wil goe, he goeth.  
*Fuéremos anduviéremos,* We shall or will goe, we goe.  
*Fuéredes, anduviéredes,* Ye shall or will goe, ye goe.  
*Fuéren, anduviéren,* They shall or will goe, they goe.

## After the future.

Quando, Si,

When, If.

*To vniérese, Sído, andádo, &c.* I shall haue beene, I shall haue gone, I haue gone, &c.  
*To fuérese ydo, andádo, &c.* Idem.

## Infinitive.

*Yr, andar ; Auér ydo,* To goe, to haue gone.  
*Hauér de yr, andar,* To ought to goe.  
*Ser por yr, andar,* To be to goe.  
*Téndo, andádo,* Going.

As touching the vse of these two Verbes, it is requisite to vnderstand, that *Yr* doth alwaies denote the action of going and traueilling from place to place, but *andar* signifieth as to goe wandring here and there, without determining any place; and hath sometimes the force of *Venir* to come, as *anda acá*, come hither, and is spoken as it were in a manner of choller and commanding, as, *Andád pára ruin, perro, móro, judío, heréje, ladrón, puto*; Get thee gone for a wicked one as thou art, dog, moore, hereticke, theefe,

theefe, whorehunter. It is taken moreouer in certaine actions which doe not signifie going in any place, as *En que ándas?* What doest thou? *ánda os á dezir donayres*, goe thou to tell some iests. It behoueth also to note that *va* the third person of *vóy*, is taken in two or three diuers significations, as, *Que va en éllo?* What doth that import? *No va en éllonáda*; It importeth nothing. *Lo que va de mi al Réy, éssó va de vos a vn sábio*, Looke how much I come short of the King, so much is the difference betwixt you and a wise man. *Múcho va de Pédro á Pédro*. There is a great deale of oddes betweene Peter and Peter. *Cómo os va en éssa tiérra?* How do you finde your selfe in that country or quarter? *Cómo os fué en el camino de Milán?* How was it with you in the iourney of Milan? *Tédo va bien*: All goes well. I might here put downe many other examples, but I remit them to the diligence of the Students. Yet it shall be needfull to annex hereunto the declining of the Verbe *Venir*, for a conclusion, which is as followeth.

*Indicative present.*

<i>To vengo,</i>	I come.
<i>Viénes,</i>	Thou comest.
<i>Viéne,</i>	He cometh.
<i>Venemos,</i>	We come.
<i>Venis,</i>	Ye come.
<i>Viénen,</i>	They come.

*Imperfect.*

<i>To venia,</i>	I did come.
<i>Venias,</i>	Thou didst come.
<i>Venia,</i>	He did come.

*Veniamos,*

<i>Veniamos,</i>	We did come.
<i>Veniades,</i>	Ye did come.
<i>Venían,</i>	They did come.

1. *Perfect.*

<i>To vine,</i>	I came.
<i>Veniste,</i>	Thou camest.
<i>Vino,</i>	He came.
<i>Venimos,</i>	We came.
<i>Venistes,</i>	Ye came.
<i>Vimieron,</i>	They came.

2. *Perfect. And Pluperfect.*

<i>To he &amp; auia venido, &amp;c.</i>	I haue, & had come, &c.
<i>To soy, fui, &amp; éra venido,</i>	I haue, was, & had come.

*Future.*

<i>To verné &amp; vendré,</i>	I shall or will come.
<i>Vernás &amp; vendrás,</i>	Thou shalt or wilt come.
<i>Verná &amp; vendrá,</i>	He shall or will come.
<i>Vernemos &amp; vendrémos,</i>	We shall or will come.
<i>Vernéys &amp; vendréys,</i>	Ye shall or will come.
<i>Vernán &amp; vendrán,</i>	They shall or will come.

2. *Future.*

<i>To he &amp; tengo de venir, &amp;c.</i>	I shall or will come, or I must come.
--	---------------------------------------

*Imperative.*

<i>Ven tu, ven acá,</i>	Come thou, come hither.
<i>Venga aquél,</i>	Let him come.
<i>Vengamos nosotros,</i>	Let vs come.
<i>Venid vosotros,</i>	Come ye.
<i>Vengan aquéllos,</i>	Let them come.

*Optative*

*Optative Future, and Present of the Subjunctive.*

<i>Aunque,</i>	<i>Although.</i>
<i>To venga,</i>	<i>I come.</i>
<i>Vengas,</i>	<i>Thou comest.</i>
<i>Venga,</i>	<i>He cometh.</i>
<i>Vengamos,</i>	<i>We come.</i>
<i>Vengays,</i>	<i>Ye come.</i>
<i>Vengan,</i>	<i>They come.</i>

*Imperfect.*

<i>Aunque,</i>	<i>Although.</i>
<i>To viniéssse, viniéra, &amp;c.</i>	<i>I came or did come.</i>
<i>Viniésses,</i>	<i>Thou cam'st or didst come.</i>
<i>Viniéssse,</i>	<i>He came or did come.</i>
<i>Viniésssemos,</i>	<i>We came or did come.</i>
<i>Viniéssedes,</i>	<i>Ye came or did come.</i>
<i>Viniéssen,</i>	<i>They came or did come.</i>

*1. Perfect.*

<i>Aunque,</i>	<i>Although.</i>
<i>To áya venido,</i>	<i>I haue come, &amp;c.</i>
<i>Séa venido, &amp;c.</i>	

*2. Perfect.*

<i>Quando,</i>	<i>When.</i>
<i>To úne venido, &amp;c.</i>	<i>I haue come, &amp;c.</i>
	<i>Pluperfect.</i>

*Pluperfect.*

<i>Aunque,</i>	<i>Although.</i>
<i>To viniéra,</i>	<i>I had come.</i>
<i>Viniéras,</i>	<i>Thou hadst come.</i>
<i>Viniéra,</i>	<i>He had come.</i>
<i>Viniéramos,</i>	<i>We had come.</i>
<i>Viniérades,</i>	<i>Ye had come.</i>
<i>Viniéran,</i>	<i>They had come.</i>

*Likewise with the Auxiliar, Englished like this, and as followeth.*

<i>To vniéssse &amp; vniéra veni-</i>	<i>I would or should haue come, &amp;c.</i>
<i>do, &amp;c.</i>	

*Likewise.*

<i>To fuéssse &amp; fuéra ve-</i>	<i>I had come, I would or should haue come.</i>
<i>nido,</i>	

*Uncertaine Tense.*

<i>To vernia &amp; vendría,</i>	<i>I should or would come.</i>
<i>Vernias &amp; vendrias,</i>	<i>Thou shouldst or wouldst come.</i>
<i>Vernia &amp; vendría,</i>	<i>He should or would come.</i>
<i>Verniamos &amp; vendriamos,</i>	<i>We should or would come.</i>
<i>Verniades &amp; vendriades,</i>	<i>Ye should or would come.</i>
<i>Vernian &amp; vendrian,</i>	<i>They should or would come.</i>

*Future.*

<i>Quando, Si.</i>	<i>When, If.</i>
<i>To viniere,</i>	<i>I shall or will come, I come.</i>
<i>Viniéres,</i>	<i>Thou shalt or wilt come, Thou comest.</i>
	<i>I Viniere,</i>

## Optative Future, and Present of the Subjunctive.

<i>Aunque,</i>	Although.
<i>To venga,</i>	I come.
<i>Vengas,</i>	Thou comest.
<i>Venga,</i>	He cometh.
<i>Vengamos,</i>	We come.
<i>Vengays,</i>	Ye come.
<i>Vengan,</i>	They come.

## Imperfect.

<i>Aunque,</i>	Although.
<i>To viniésse, viniéra, &amp;c.</i>	I came or did come.
<i>Viniésse,</i>	Thou cam'st or didst come.
<i>Viniésse,</i>	He came or did come.
<i>Viniéssamos,</i>	We came or did come.
<i>Viniéssedes,</i>	Ye came or did come.
<i>Viniéssen,</i>	They came or did come.

## 1. Perfect.

<i>Aunque,</i>	Although.
<i>To áya venido,</i>	I have come, &c.
<i>Séa venido, &amp;c.</i>	

## 2. Perfect.

<i>Quando,</i>	When.
<i>To úne venido, &amp;c.</i>	I have come, &c.
	Pluperfect.

## Pluperfect.

<i>Aunque,</i>	Although.
<i>To viniéra,</i>	I had come.
<i>Viniéras,</i>	Thou hadst come.
<i>Viniéra,</i>	He had come.
<i>Viniéramos,</i>	We had come.
<i>Viniérades,</i>	Ye had come.
<i>Viniéran,</i>	They had come.

Likewise with the Auxiliar, Englished like this, and as followeth.

*To uníesse & uniera veni-* I would or should have come, &c.

## Likewise.

*To fuésse & fuera veni-* I had come, I would or should have come.

## Uncertain Tense.

<i>To vernia &amp; vendria,</i>	I should or would come.
<i>Vernias &amp; vendrias,</i>	Thou shouldst or wouldst come.
<i>Vernia &amp; vendria,</i>	He should or would come.
<i>Verniamos &amp; vendriamos,</i>	We should or would come.
<i>Verniades &amp; vendriades,</i>	Ye should or would come.
<i>Vernian &amp; vendrian,</i>	They should or would come.

## Future.

*Quando, Si.*  
*To viniere,*  
*Viniéres,*

When, If.  
I shall or will come, I come.  
Thou shalt or wilt come, Thou comest.

L

Viniere,



<i>Viniere,</i>	Hee shall or will come, Hee commeth.
<i>Viniéremos,</i>	We shall or will come, We come.
<i>Viniéredes</i> or <i>viniérdes,</i>	Ye shall or will come, ye come.
<i>Vinién,</i>	They shall or will come, they come.

*After the Future.*

<i>Quando, Si,</i>	When, If.
<i>To viniere &amp; fuere venido, &amp;c.</i>	I shall haue come, I haue come, &c.

*Infinitive.*

<i>Venir,</i>	To come.
<i>Auér &amp; ser venido,</i>	To be come.
<i>Auér de venir,</i>	To ought to come.
<i>Estár por venir,</i>	To be to come.
<i>Viniendo,</i>	Comming.

Here might a difficultie arise concerning *To be venido*, and *Yo soy venido*, but to make it cleare, it behoueth to know that the first signifieth the action and motion of the comming; and the second denoteth the repose or rest after the comming; as if one demandeth, *Quién ha venido acá?* who is come hither? It shall be vnderstood of a person that is no longer to be present. In regard of the repose or rest, they may say, *v.m. sea bien venido*; you are welcome, where the person is seene to be present.

It furthermore requireth to note, that when these Verbes *váy, ándo*, and *vengo*, are with the Verbe *soy*, they be read in the plurall number; as, *Venidos somos*, We are come; *idos son*, they are gone; *Andados son los días*, The dayes are passed.

It

It ought not to be forgotten to tell, how that the Future of the Indicative, in all Verbes is oftentimes expressed by the Infinitive, adioyning thereto the Verbe *he, has, ha*, and interposing these Particles, *me, te, se, le, la, lo, les, las, los*: *Llamárme has*; *dezírte he*; *hazérse ha*; *verlo has*; *querérle he*; *embiárte ha, &c.* for, *Llamarás me*; *te diré* or *diré te*; *hará se*; *lo verá*; *querré la*; *le embiará, &c.* and the signification is not altered, notwithstanding there be two of the said Particles interposed, as, *embiárte la he*, for *te la embiaré*, I will send it thee. The like interposition is made sometimes in other Tenses, wherein the Verbe put after is changed into the Particle *hía*, which should seeme to be the latter part of the Verbe diuided, as *Dezírte hía*, in stead of *diría te*: *verlo hías*, for *verías lo*. And so of the rest, which the diligent may obserue in reading: This is done by a figure called Epenthesis.

The second Person plurall of the Imperative, hauing after him one of these Particles, *le, la, lo*, or their plurall, *les, las, los*, changeth almost alwayes his finall letter, which is *d*, to the first of the Particle; so that it is nothing but a Metathesis, or a transposition of the two said letters, as in stead of *veédlo*, they put *veéldo*; *dezíldo* for *dezídle*; *llamálda* for *llamád-la*, and so generally of all.

Likewise the said *d* of the Imperative is sometimes taken away by the figure Apocope, as *Andaos*, for *andados*, &c. And *s* in the first Person plurall both of the Imperative and Future, as *vámonos* for *vamos nos*, *yrémonos* for *yrémos nos*, &c.

I haue often found that the Infinitives hauing these abouesaid Particles adioyned, lose their finall letter *r*, taking in place thereof an *l*, which seemeth

to take away the harshness of the sound, as *véllo* instead of *verlo*; *dezille* for *dezírle*, and many others: and this is done by a Figure named Antistrophe. It behoueth also to note, that these said Particles, and generally all others which are construed with the Infinitive, as, *me, te, se, nos,* and *os*, oblique case of *vos*, is in such sort thereto conioyned, that it maketh but one only word or diction.

If I should goe about to coniugate all Verbes, as well those that be regular as irregulars, I should cause this booke to swell into a great volume, and would therein but little auaille the Readers: wherefore those already put downe shall suffice for the present, as being all wherein is found any difficultie in their declining. It only remaineth to declare, that there are some whose Present of the Indicative is somewhat difficult to forme in regard of the Infinitive, as be those that end in *cer, zir, ger,* and *gir*; for *cer* maketh his present *esco* or *ezco*, as *Obedescér, obedéscó; agradéscer, agradézco*: *zir* assumeth *g*, as *Traduzír, tradúzgo*, which hath in the first Perfect *tradúxe*; and so likewise *induzír* and *reduzír*: *ger* and *gir* are changed into *jo*, as *Coger, cójo; Pingír, fínjo; Regír, ríjo*, and so forth of the rest.

### *Of Verbes Passiues.*

Verbes Passiues are formed in two sorts; the one is by putting *se* before the Actiue, as, *Conosce*, he knoweth, *Se conoce*, he is knowne: *Vee*, he seeth, *se puede ver*, he may be seene; &c. And the other by adioyning the passiue participle of any Verbe, to the Tenses and Persons of the Verbe *Ser*; as, *Yo soy amado*, Feminine, *amada*, I am loued; *tu eres amado, aquél*

es

*es amado*: *Nosotros somos amados*, Feminine, *amadas*, *vosotros soys amados, aquellos son amados*. And so in euery Tense of the said Verbe.

Yet here is to be obserued, that the Participle *Sido*, in forming the Preter Tenses thereby, doth neither varie in Gender nor Number, whatsoever Substantiue be annexed vnto it; as, *El Señor ha sido; La Señora ha sido; Los Señores han sido; Las Señoras han sido, &c.* And the reason is, that all Participles ioyned with the Verbe *auér* to forme the aforesaid Tenses, doe neuer alter their Gender or Number; as, *Yo he enseñado, la mugér ha enñado; Los maéstrós han auian enseñado, &c.* Except *Sido* be interposed, for then it varieth according to the Gender and Number of the Substantiue; as, *Yo he sido enseñado; La mugér ha sido enseñada, Los hombres han & auian sido enseñados*: and so of the rest.

### *Of Verbes Impersonals.*

There be some Verbes which ought to be named Impersonals, for that they are only found in the third person of euery Tense, and are commonly knowne in English by the signe, *it*, and sometimes by the signe *there*, as are, *Cumplir, ser menester, conuenir, importar, parecer, pertenescer, acaescer, acontescer, plazér, agradár, pesár, abastár*, and others the like, which are vsed in this manner.

*Me cümple dezír,*

It behoueth me, or Is requisite to say.

*Es menester que yo diga,*

It is fit, or behouefull that I say.

*A mí me conuiene,*

It is expedient, or fit for me.

<i>No te importa à ti,</i>	It nothing concerneth thee.
<i>A mi me parece,</i>	It seemeth to me.
<i>A Juan pertenesce,</i>	It appertaineth to Iohn.
<i>A todos acaesce or acontese pecar,</i>	It befalleth, or hapneth vnto all to sin.
<i>A mi me place, or A mi me agrada,</i>	It pleaseth, or contenteth me.
<i>A todos nos pesa de tu mal,</i>	We are all sorry, or grieved at thy hurt.
<i>No te basta à ti? &amp;c.</i>	Is it not enough for thee?

They be as well found in the plurall as the Latine Impersonals: as,

<i>Muchas cosas acontecen no pensadas,</i>	Many things fall out not thought vpon.
<i>No me importauan nada estas cosas,</i>	These matters did nothing concerne me.

### Of Gerunds.

The Spaniards haue but only one Gerund ending in *do*, for the rest they vse with the Infinitive mood, adioyning thereto the particle *a*, and this is to be vnderstood of Verbes signifying motion or repose, as *Estár*, *yr*, *venir*. Examples.

<i>No estés à hablar de mi,</i>	Be ye not to speake of me.
<i>To vengo à dezir mi parecer,</i>	I come to tell my aduice.
<i>Vamos à morir por la fe de Christo,</i>	Let vs goe die for the faith of Christ.

As concerning the Gerund in *do*, that of the first Coniugation shall be formed of the Infinitive, by changing *ar* into *ando*, as *Amár*, *amando*; *Estár*, *estando*, &c. That of the second shall change *er* into *yendo*,

*yendo*, as, *Leer*, *leyendo*; *Entender*, *entendiendo*, &c. That of the third must change *r* into *endo*, as, *Oyr*, *oyendo*; *dezir*, *diziendo*; *Venir*, *Viniendo*: but it beho- ueth to note that in many the *e* which is the penul- time of the Infinitive, is changed into *i* in the Ge- rund, as you see that *dezir* maketh *diziendo*, and not *deziendo*; *Sentir*, *sintiendo*; *Corregir*, *corrigiendo*: *Morir* maketh *muriendo*, changing the *o* into *u*; and so likewise *Dormir*, *durmiendo*. The said Gerund is vsed both with the particle *en*, and without it; indif- ferently denoting all the three Tenses; to wit, the Present, the Preterperfect, and the Future, which is knowne by the Verbe annexed vnto it. Examples of the Perfect. *En diziendo estas palabras todos se leuan- táron*: In speaking these words all arose. *En llamán- do a la puerta luego salimos todos*: In calling at the gate, we all went forth immediatly. Of the Future: *To yré en acabando de comer*: I will goe so soone as I shall haue dined. And without the particle *en*: *Tu vas comiendo por la calle, y poleroneando*: Thou go- est eating through the street, and playing the sloth- full person. *To estoy trabajando, y tu te estás holgán- do*: I am labouring, and thou standest doing nothing. This last example is of the Present tense, and many more might be alledged if it were needfull, but it shall suffice to know the tense of the Verbe that is ad- ioyned to the Gerund.

Here is to be noted that the Spaniards vse almost alwaies the Gerund for what Verbe or tense soeuer it be, adioyning thereto *estár*, as to say, I dine, thou mockest, he writeth, they say, *Estoy comiendo, estás burlando, está escribiendo*; I did sup, thou didst sleepe, he did speake; *To estána cenando, tu estás durmién- do, el estána hablando*, and so of all the rest.

*Of Participles.*

**T**He Participles haue their Genders, signification and tenses, as the Latines, that is the Present, as, *Amante, escriuiente, oyente, siruiente, creciente, menguante, paciente, teniente, cognosciente*; and others the like ending in *te*, in place whereof the Verbe is sometimes put with the Article or Pronoun *el*, and the Relatiue *que*, as, *El que ama, el que escriue, el que oye, &c.* The Participles of the Preterit doe end in *do*, and those of the first and third Coniugation are formed by changing the *r* of the Infinitive into *do*, as, *Amár, amado*; *Oír, oydo*. But those of the second change the syllable *er* into *ido*, as, *Sabér, sabido*; *Querér, querido, &c.*

There be some excepted from this rule, as *Suelto* of *soltár*: *muerto* of *morir*: *hecho* of *hazér*: *dicho* of *dezir*: *puesto* of *ponér*: *escrito* of *escriuir*: *uelto* of *boluér*: *Cubierto* of *cubrir*: *Confuso* of *confundir*: *despierto* of *despertar*: *abierto* of *abrir*: *visto* of *ver*, and *enxuto* of *enxugar*. As for the Future it is vsed by circumlocution with the Verbe *ser*: as, *El que ha de ser amado*; he that shall be, or ought to be loued. *El que ha de ser muerto*; He that ought to be dead, or he which ought to die. What we haue hitherto spoken of the parts declinable shall suffice: wherefore let vs come to the others.

*Of the Aduerbe.*

**T**He Aduerbe is a part of speech, which is alwaies ioyned with the Verbe, to signifie time, place, quality, number, quantity, affirmation, and diuers

diuers other accidents which shall be knowne by the composition of the same Aduerbs, whereof we will put downe the greater part: And first,

*Of the Aduerbes of time.*

<i>Oy,</i>	To day.
<i>Ayer,</i>	Yesterday.
<i>Ante ayer,</i>	The day before yesterday.
<i>Mañana, por la mañana,</i>	To morrow, in the morning
<i>Tarde,</i>	Late.
<i>Por la tarde,</i>	In the afternoone or eue- ning.
<i>Temprano,</i>	Betimes.
<i>Agora,</i>	Now.
<i>Poco tiempo ha,</i>	A little while agoe.
<i>Poco ha,</i>	A little while agoe.
<i>Después,</i>	Since.
<i>Algúnavez,</i>	Sometimes.
<i>Amenudo,</i>	Thicke, often.
<i>En algún tiempo,</i>	Heretofore, In time past.
<i>Muchos días ha,</i>	Many daies agoe.
<i>Muchas vezes,</i>	Many times.
<i>Quando,</i>	When.
<i>Mucho ha,</i>	Long agoe.
<i>Entonces, en aquella sazón,</i>	Then, at that time or season.
<i>Al presente,</i>	sometimes signifieth, then, or at that time: as,
<i>Estáua al presente en aquella ciudad,</i>	He was at that time or in- stant in that City.
<i>Entre tanto, en este comedio,</i>	In the meane while or space.
<i>Hasta que,</i>	Vntill that.
<i>Mientras,</i>	Whilft.

<i>Por adelante,</i>	Hereafter.
<i>De qui adelante,</i>	From this time forward.
<i>En lo venidéro,</i>	In time to come.
<i>Désde entónçes,</i>	Since then, thenceforth.
<i>Désde agora,</i>	Henceforth.
<i>Nunca jamás,</i>	Neuer.
<i>Aun,</i>	Yet.
<i>Contino,</i>	Continually.
<i>De contino,</i>	Ordinarily.
<i>Luégo, encontinente,</i>	Presently, immediatly.
<i>A la hora,</i>	At that houre.
<i>Tá,</i>	Already.
<i>Siempre, siempre jamás,</i>	Alwaies, euermore.
<i>Para siempre jamás,</i>	For euer and euer.
<i>Dénde agora,</i>	Henceforth.
<i>Dénde entónçes,</i>	Thenceforth.
<i>Hásta quando,</i>	Till when.
<i>Hásta tanto,</i>	Till then.
<i>Désde que,</i>	Since that.
<i>De ay adelante,</i>	From that time forward.
<i>Después acá,</i>	After this time.
<i>A deshora,</i>	Vnawares, or vnlooked for.
<i>De aquí a un rato,</i>	Within a while, ere it bee long.
<i>Cada día,</i>	Eucry day.
<i>Cada hora,</i>	Eucry houre.
<i>Cada rato,</i>	Eucry while stich, as we say.
<i>Cada momento,</i>	Eucry moment.
<i>Quando quiera,</i>	Whensocuer.
<i>Antes, ante,</i>	Before.

This Aduerbe *Cada*, is ioyned as well to the Noun as to the Verbe, and is said *cada uno*, eucry one; *cada hombre*, eucry man; *cada qual con su yguál*, eucry one with his equall.

*Luégo*

*Luégo* is also found in the Coniunction, where it signifieth, then, or therefore.

*Désde & dénde*, are Aduerbs of place so well as of time; as, *désde aquí, allí ay tres léguas*, From hence, thence, there be three leagues.

*Ante, poco*, and *múcho*, not being ioyned to other particles, doe change their nature, for *ante* is also a Preposition, and *poco* and *múcho* are Aduerbs of quantity or of comparison.

The Aduerbe *jamás*, is seldome an affirmatiue, but almost alwaies a negatiue, wherefore it shall likewise be put amongst the Aduerbs of negation.

*Of the Aduerbs of place.*

<i>Aquí &amp; acá,</i>	Here.
<i>Ay, allí &amp; allá,</i>	There.
<i>De aquí,</i>	From hence.
<i>De ay, de allí,</i>	From thence.
<i>Por aquí &amp; por acá,</i>	This way.
<i>Por ay, por allí &amp; por allá,</i>	That way.
<i>Acá,</i>	Hither.
<i>Allá,</i>	Thither.
<i>Acullá,</i>	Yonder.
<i>De acá,</i>	From hence.
<i>De allá, de acullá,</i>	From thence, or from yonder place.
<i>Por acullá,</i>	That way, yonder way.
<i>Léxos,</i>	Farre off.
<i>Dentro, or adentro,</i>	Within.
<i>Fuera or afuera,</i>	Without.
<i>Do, adó, adónde, dónde,</i>	Where.
<i>De do, de dónde,</i>	From whence.
<i>Por dónde,</i>	Which way.
<i>Ay abáxo, acullá abáxo,</i>	There below.

*Acá*

<i>Acá abáxo,</i>	Here below.
<i>Házia or hácia,</i>	Towards.
<i>Ariba, de suso,</i>	Above.
<i>Abáxo, de Yuso,</i>	Below or beneath.
<i>Atrás,</i>	Behinde.
<i>Do quiéra, adó quiéra,</i>	Wheresoeuer.
<i>dónde quiéra,</i>	
<i>Aquẽde,</i>	On this side.
<i>Allẽde,</i>	On the other side, or beyond.
<i>De ótra parte,</i>	From another part or place.
<i>Por ótra parte,</i>	Another way.
<i>En ótra parte,</i>	In another place.
<i>A ótra parte,</i>	To another place.

It will be requisite to note that these first Aduerbs of place, to wit, *aquí*, *ay*, *allí*, and *acá*, *allá*, *acullá*, are attributed to diuers tenses and persons, that is, *aquí* and *acá* to the first, which is to say to the place where the person is that speaketh: *ay* and *allá* are applied to the second, and *allí* and *acullá* be ioyned to a third place where is some other person. *Aquí*, *ay*, and *allí*, without particles signifie rest or repose in a place, and with them they denote a motion or mouing from some place.

*Example.*

*V. M. me escribe que yo le escriua, si está aquí su hermano; de lo qual estoy espantado, creyendo que estuviéssse ay, mas de séys días ha:*

You write to me that I write vnto you, if your brother bee here; whereat I am amazed, thinking that he was there aboute foure daies since: For they writ vnto me

*porque de Róma me escriuiéron, que auia estado allí dos días esperando compañía. El se partió de aquí a los quinze de mayo, y no sé si ha de boluér acá presto. También me da mucha pena el no oyr cosa chica ni grande del; que si por ay passare alguno de la Corte, ruego a v. m. le encamine por aquí, para que sepámos si por allí passó, por donde passaron los otros.*

me from Rome, that hee had beene there two daies expecting company. He departed from hence on the fifteenth of May, and I know not whether he will quickly returne. I am also very much troubled that I heare nothing from him neither little nor great: that if any one of the Court shall passe that way, I desire you to direct him this way, to the end wee may know if he passed that way, where the rest haue passed.

As touching these others, *acá*, *allá*, *acullá*, with the prepositions, they be almost alike, sauing that they speake more generally by them then by the former, as if one man meeteth with another, and would demand of him what hee doth in the parts where hee meeteth him; he shall say: *Que háze v. m. por acá?* What make you this way, or in these quarters? And it shall not be so properly said *por aquí*: likewise *por allá estúue el otro día, y no ví a v. m.* I was that way the other day, and did not see you.

*Likewise.*

*No sé si haurá pasado, por allá mi hermano: váse d'acá por*

I know not if my brother haue passed that way: hee goes vp and downe a vagabond,

*allá vagabúndo, y el* gabond, and the other  
*ótro día estúno acullá* day was there below about  
*abáxo, mas de tres* three houres.  
*horas.*

Where it may be seenethat *allá* is referred to the person to whom they speake; *allí* may be reduced to a third whereof it is spoken, that is to say, to the place where the person is, but *acullá* shall bee onely vnderstood of the place, without vnderstanding any person, which will be requisite to obserue.

There be certaine Aduerbs of time, which are also taken for Aduerbs of place, as are, *de aquí adelante*, from hence forward, *de ay adelante*, from thence forward.

These Aduerbes *aquénde* and *allénde* are but seldom vsed, by reason of their antiquitie, but in stead of them are taken, *De ésta parte*, and *del ótra parte*, or *de aquélla parte*: *allénde* notwithstanding is many times applied to signifie, Besides; as, *Allénde desto*, beside this, and is as much as to say, *de mas desto*. They be also Prepositions: for it is found in two ancient bookes, *aquénde el mar*, on this side of the sea: *allénde el río*, on the other side of the riuer.

#### *Aduerbs of Number.*

The Aduerbs of Number are nothing but the Nounes numerall, adioyning *vez* to the singular, and *vézes* to the plurall: as,

<i>Vna vez,</i>	Once, or one time.
<i>Dos vézes,</i>	Twice, or two times.
<i>Tres vézes,</i>	Thrice, or three times.
<i>Quátro vézes,</i>	Foure times.

Fiue

<i>Cinco vézes,</i>	Fiue times.
<i>Seys vézes,</i>	Six times.
<i>Véynte vézes,</i>	Twenty times.
<i>Véynte y vna vez,</i>	One and twenty times.
<i>Tréynta vézes,</i>	Thirty times.
<i>Quarénta vézes,</i>	Forty times.
<i>Cien vézes,</i>	A hundred times.
<i>Mil vézes,</i>	A thousand times.
<i>Cien mil vézes,</i>	A hundred thousand times.

And so of all the rest till it come to be infinite, taking as is said, the Numbers, whereof may also be formed certaine Aduerbs, with adioyning thereto either *vez* or *vézes*, as are *de dos en dos*, *de tres en tres*, *de quátro en quátro*, which be Aduerbs of order, as who should say: *Van de dos en dos*, They goe two and two at a time, three and three, foure and foure: which is vnderstood in forme of going in order; but *Uno á uno*, *dos á dos*, *tres á tres*, *quátro á quátro*, should be vnderstood as of two contrary and opposite parties the one and the other, as who should say, One against one, two against two, three against three, foure against foure. And *Tántos á tántos*, is as much as to say, As many of one side as of the other.

#### *Example.*

<i>Vámos tres á tres,</i>	Let vs goe fight, three against three,
<i>ó tántos á tántos á reñir,</i>	or as many of one part as of the other,
<i>que me conténto déllo.</i>	for I am content therewith.

And it shall not be well said, *Vámos de dos en dos*, or *de tres en tres*, *de uno en uno*, which are Aduerbs of Order, or at least-wise seruing to order.

*Aduerbs*



*Aduerbs of Quantitie.*

<i>Mucho,</i>	Much.
<i>Poco,</i>	Little.
<i>Muy mucho,</i>	Very much.
<i>Muy poco,</i>	Very little.
<i>Un poco, poquito,</i>	A little.
<i>Muy poquito,</i>	A very little.
<i>Assaz, harto,</i>	Enough, sufficient.
<i>Harto poco,</i>	Little enough.
<i>Demasiado,</i>	Too much.
<i>De mas desto,</i>	Besides this, furthermore.
<i>Al pie de ciento,</i>	Well nigh, or neere upon a hundred.
<i>Al pie de mil,</i>	Well nigh a thousand, or about a thousand.
<i>Mucho mas,</i>	Much more.
<i>Poco mas,</i>	Little more.
<i>Demasiadamente,</i>	Excessiue.
<i>Sin medida,</i>	Vnmeasurably.
<i>Tan quan, &amp; tanto quanto,</i>	So much as.
<i>Abundantemente &amp; abundosamente,</i>	Abundantly.
<i>En abundancia,</i>	In abundance.
<i>A montones,</i>	By heapes.

These Aduerbs, *tanto* and *quanto*, be alwaies ioy-  
ned to the Verbe and to the Substantiue: but *tan* and  
*quan*, are put before the Noun Adiectiue or another  
Aduerbe.

*Examples.*

*Yo tengo tan buenos amigos como vos, y tan buena renta.* I haue as good friends  
as you, and as good rent.

*O quan mal lo hazéis conmigo, y quan bien lo he hecho yo con vos.*

*Quanto hágo todo es vano.*

*Tanto me diréis que lo creeré.*

*Tanto quanto me dixerdes haré.*

*Noténgo tanto dinero como vos.*

In these examples following they bee put before  
Adiectiues or Participles, and other Aduerbs, but  
not before the Verbe: as,

*Cantaba tan dulcemente. Hízolo tan sabiamente y tan bien, que no podía ser mejor.*

*Estan amado, tan fauorecido, tan querido, y tan deseado de todos, que no ay hombre mas dichoso que el.*

*Estan hermosa, tan linda, tan galana, tan virtuosa, tan bien acondicionada, que tiene pocas cosas que se le yguálen.*

O how ill you deale  
with mee, and how well  
I haue dealed with you.

All that I doe is in  
vaine.

You will tell mee so  
much that I shall beleecue  
it.

All that you shall tell  
me, I will doe.

I haue not so much  
money as you.

He did sing so sweetly.  
He did it so wisely and  
so well, that it could not  
be better.

He is so beloued, so fa-  
uored, so well willed,  
and so desired of all, that  
there is no man more  
happy then hee.

She is so faire, so pret-  
ty, so neatly attired, so  
vertuous, so well condi-  
tioned, that she hath but  
few her equals.

These Aduerbs *mas*, *muy*, and *mucho*, serue with  
Nounes positives to forme the comparatiues, and  
then they be Aduerbs of comparison, augmenting  
the



the quality, as *Triste, mas triste*, sad, more sad : *buéno, muy buéno*, good, very good.

*Mucho* serveth to the comparatiue and superlatiue, and signifieth sometimes, Too much, when it is ioyned to a Noun Adiectiue : as, *Es mucho grande*. It is too great, for to signifie much ( I speake in augmenting the quality ) it behoueth to say *muy*, as *Esta dama es muy hermosa*, This Gentlewoman is very faire.

Sometimes moreouer two of the said Aduerbs be ioyned together, the better to expresse a superlatiue, or to double the comparatiue : as, *muy mas grande*, much more great : *Mucho mas triste*, much more sad.

There be some comparatiues irregular; as, *mejor*, *peor*, *mayor*, *menor*, of *buéno*, *málo*, *grande*, *pequeno*, which are positiues.

The superlatiues admit neither Aduerbs, nor any other particles, but follow the Italian forme : notwithstanding they haue three diuers endings, to wit, *ssimo*, *lmo*, and *errimo* ; as, *Boníssimo*, *santíssimo*, *difícilimo*, *similimo*, *acérrimo*, *ubérrimo*.

*Aduerbs of qualitie.*

<i>Bien, buenamente,</i>	Well.
<i>Mal, malamente,</i>	Ill.
<i>Osadamente,</i>	Boldly.
<i>Atreuidamente,</i>	Audaciously.
<i>Hermosamente,</i>	Beautifully, comely.
<i>Dulcemente,</i>	Sweetly.
<i>Donosamente,</i>	Pleasantly.
<i>Prudentemente,</i>	Wisely.
<i>Sabiamente,</i>	Sagely.
<i>Fuertemente,</i>	Stoutly, couragiously.
	<i>Elegan-</i>

*Elegantemente,*  
*Liberalmente,*  
*Ligeramente,*  
*Dichosamente,*  
*Gentilmente,*  
*Facilmente,*  
*Diffícilmente,*  
*Adrede,*  
*Lindamente,*  
*Pulidamente,*  
*Delicadamente,*  
*Locamente,*  
*A sabiendas,*

Elegantly.  
 Liberally.  
 Lightly, nimbly.  
 Happily.  
 Finely, handsomely.  
 Easily.  
 Hardly, difficultly.  
 On set purpose.  
 Featly, prettily.  
 Neatly.  
 Delicately.  
 Foolishly.  
 Wittingly.

And so of many others which end almost all in *mente*, being formed of Nounes : as, *sabiamente de sabio*, *locamente de loco*, &c. to all which may be adioyned the aforenamed Aduerbe *Muy*, to signifie augmentation of the quality : as, *muy sabiamente*, very wisely, *muy locamente*, very foolishly, &c. It is often found that in ioyning two of these Aduerbs together, the first is depriued of two whole syllables : as, *Sabia y discretamente*, for *Sabiamente y discretamente*, and it is sufficient that the last be entirely expressed.

*Aduerbs of Negation.*

<i>No, ni, ni aun,</i>	No or not, neither, nor yet.
<i>Aun no, no aun,</i>	Not as yet.
<i>Ni menos, tam poco,</i>	Neither.
<i>Ni tam poco,</i>	Nor as little, nor neither.
<i>Nada, nada,</i>	Nothing, nothing at all.
<i>Nunca,</i>	Neuer.
<i>En ninguna manera,</i>	In no waies.
	M 2

*Antes,*

*Antes, mas ántes,* Nay rather, sooner,  
*No solaménte,* Not onely.

The Aduerbe *no*, is alwaies a negatiue, bee it alone or accompanied ; for two negations make not an affirmation, so that *Náda* and *nonáda* signifie one thing : *tam póco* and *ni tam póco* are alike ; *jamás* and *núnca jamás*, are all one. *Ménos* is a simple negation which is explicated in English : Neither, and is commonly found in Interrogations. Example: *Tienes diné o ? no ; y vestidos ? ménos : y de comer ? ménos*. Hast thou any mony ? no ; and apparell ? neither : and to eat ? neither : whereto may also be adioyned the negatiue *ni*, as : *To no tengo dinéros ni ménos vestidos*. But when the particle *que* commeth after, it is then an Aduerbe comparatiue, and not negatiue : as, *To téngo ménos que tu*, I haue lesse then thou. *Nonada* is sometimes separated by interposing a word ; as, *No quiéronáda*, I will haue nothing ; and likewise conioyned : as *Nonáda quiéro* ; which altereth not the signification.

*Aduerbs of Affirmation.*

<i>Si,</i>	Yea, yes.
<i>Tambien,</i>	Also.
<i>Siciérto,</i>	Yes certainly.
<i>Si por ciérto,</i>	Yes for certaine.
<i>Si de verdád,</i>	Yes in truth.
<i>Por ciérto,</i>	For certaine, truly.
<i>Por verdád,</i>	Verily.
<i>Porqué no ?</i>	Why not ?
<i>Ciertaménte,</i>	Certainly.
<i>Así es, sin dúda,</i>	It is so, without doubt.
<i>Conuiéne à saber,</i>	To wit, that is to say.

*Otrosí,*

<i>Otrosí,</i>	Likewise.
<i>Ansies,</i>	So it is.
<i>Qui n dúda,</i>	Who doubteth it ?
<i>Así das,</i>	Boldly.
<i>De véras,</i>	In very deece, In good earnest.

This manner of affirming by a negatiue in forme of interrogation is very lusty and liuely, as if one demanded *Vendrêys mañana ?* It might well be answered, *Porqué no ?* Which should be as much as to say, Yes.

To this Aduerbe *de véras*, answereth *de búrlas*, which seemeth not otherwise to be an Aduerbe, not being found amongst the negatiues, although it be the contrary and priuatiue of the other ; but to speake more rightly, they be Relatiues opposite and contrary, and then both of them being found together, they there lose the nature of an Aduerbe, as may be seene in this Prouerbe.

*De búrlas ni de véras con tu señór partas péras* : Neither in iest, nor earnest, doe thou part peares with thy Master. Which is to say, that he ought not to haue any thing to meddle or diuide with his Lord or Master, or other greater then himselfe.

*Aduerbs of wishing.*

*Oxala*, an Arabian word, which is applyed to euery Tense of the Optatiue, and signifieth so much as these formes ensuing.

<i>Plêga à Diós,</i>	I pray God.
<i>Plugniêsse à Diós,</i>	I would to God.
<i>Plugniêra à Diós,</i>	Idem, and that it had pleased God.
<i>Quiêra à Diós,</i>	God grant.

M 3

But

But the said *Oxala*, is put alone without the particle *que*, which the other formes doe require. As touching the use of these Adverbs, it hath beene seene in coniugating the Verbes.

*Adverbs of Admonishing, or Exhorting.*

<i>Ea, váya,</i>	There then, goeto.
<i>Ea pués, ó rapués,</i>	Goe to then.
<i>Ora sus,</i>	Idem.
<i>Acá bayá,</i>	Dispatch, haue done.
<i>Acabémos yá,</i>	Let vs dispatch, let vs make an end.

*Adverbs of Demonstrating.*

<i>He aquí, véys aquí,</i>	See heere, loe here.
<i>Vez allí,</i>	Looke there.
<i>He lo aquí,</i>	Loe here it is.
<i>He lo allí,</i>	Looke there it is.
<i>Catáldo aquí,</i>	See it here.
<i>Catáldo ay,</i>	Behold it there.

*Adverbs of Order.*

<i>Primeramente,</i>	First.
<i>Principalmente,</i>	Principally.
<i>Quánto a lo priméro,</i>	As touching the first.
<i>Por adelante, en lo venidéro,</i>	Henceforth.
<i>De aquí adelante,</i>	From hence forward.
<i>De ay adelante,</i>	From thence forward.
<i>De allí adelante,</i>	Idem.
<i>Después desto,</i>	After this.
<i>Allende desto,</i>	Besides this.
<i>De mas desto,</i>	Furthermore.
<i>De nuevo,</i>	Again, afresh.

Otra

<i>Otravez,</i>	Another time, againe.
<i>Algúnavez,</i>	Some times.
<i>Avézes,</i>	By times, by fits.
<i>Alfin, finalmente,</i>	At the end, finally.
<i>Particularmente,</i>	Particularly.
<i>Después, después acá,</i>	After, after this.
<i>Desque,</i>	Since that.
<i>Alcábo, al fin,</i>	At the end, to conclude.
<i>De ay,</i>	From thence.
<i>Entre tanto,</i>	In the meane time.
<i>Ala póstre,</i>	At the last.
<i>De atrás,</i>	Behinde.
<i>Iten,</i>	Likewise.

*Adverbs of Diminishing.*

<i>De espácio,</i>	By leisure, leisurely.
<i>Poco a poco,</i>	By little and little.
<i>Páso, passito,</i>	Soft and faire.
<i>Quédo, quedito,</i>	Quietly, without making a noise.
<i>Apénas,</i>	Hardly.
<i>A málas penas,</i>	Very hardly.
<i>Cási,</i>	Almost.
<i>Aplazér,</i>	At pleasure.
<i>Calla calládo,</i>	Secretly, without saying a word.
<i>Callandiso,</i>	Very softly, exceeding stilly.

*Adverbs of Doubting.*

<i>Quiçá,</i>	Perhaps.
<i>A caso,</i>	By chance, by accident.
<i>Por ventúra,</i>	Peradventure.
<i>Puede ser,</i>	It may be, like enough.
	M 4

Adverbs

*Adverbs of Asking or Demanding.*

<i>Paraqué,</i>	To what end?
<i>Porqué? por que razón?</i>	Why? For what reason?
<i>Por que causa?</i>	For what cause?
<i>Cómo? Por que no?</i>	How? Wherefore not.
<i>Que? A que no?</i>	What? Why not?
<i>A que propósito?</i>	To what purpose?

The particle *no* being ioyned with the Interrogation, hath the force of demanding; as, *Tréys mañana*, No? You will goe to morrow, No? *Allá comeré*, No? I will dine there, No?

*Adverbs of assembling and gathering together.*

<i>Juntamente,</i>	Together.
<i>A la par,</i>	Side by side.
<i>A las parejas,</i>	Like for like.
<i>Juntos, en uno,</i>	Together.
<i>Entrámbos, ámbos,</i>	Both.
<i>También,</i>	Also, likewise.
<i>De compañía,</i>	Of a company.
<i>Hermanablemente,</i>	Brotherly.

This Adverbe *juntos*, admitteth the feminine *juntas*, speaking of feminines: *ámbos* maketh *ámbas*, and *entrámbos*, *entrámbas*, and haue no other difference, sauing that *ámbos*, and *entrámbos*, are spoken of two, as also *entrámbos a dos*, and *entrámbas a dos*; but *juntos*, and *juntas*, may be said of two, and of many.

*Adverbs of Separating.*

<i>Aparte,</i>	Apart.
<i>A un cabo,</i>	At one end.

De

<i>De tras,</i>	Behind.
<i>En secreto,</i>	In secret.
<i>Secretamente,</i>	Secretly.
<i>Apartadamente,</i>	Separatly.
<i>Escondidas,</i>	Closely, hiddenly, secretly.
<i>A un parte,</i>	Of one side.
<i>A hurta,</i>	By stealth.
<i>A hurtadas,</i>	Idem.
<i>A hurtadillas,</i>	Idem.
<i>Sólo, solamente,</i>	Only.
<i>Tan solamente,</i>	Only.
<i>De otra manera,</i>	After another sort, otherwise.
<i>Fuera, excepto,</i>	Except, excepted.
<i>No embargante, no obstante,</i>	Norwithstanding.
<i>Sino,</i>	Vnlesse, but.
<i>A escúras,</i>	In the darke.

*Tras* is also a preposition, and signifieth After, but is vsed simply, as, *Tras su defféo camina cada uno*: Eue-ry one trauels after his owne desire: or might well be an Adverbe of order, hauing *a* or *de* before it; as, *Mira adelante y no caerás atrás*, Looke before thee and thou shalt not fall backward: It is also an Ad-uerbe of place, but then requireth the particle *de*, as *de tras de mí*, Behind me. *Escondidas de mí*, vn-ware to me.

*Adverbs of Intention or Attention.*

<i>De todo en todo,</i>	Wholly.
<i>En todo y por todo,</i>	In all and by all.
<i>Del todo,</i>	Vtterly, altogether.
<i>En gran manera,</i>	Greatly.

Grande-

<i>Grandeménte,</i>	Greatly.
<i>Enteraménte,</i>	Entirely.
<i>Atentaménte,</i>	Attentiuely.

*Of Aduerbs Comparatines and Superlatiues.*

<i>Mas, ménos,</i>	More, lesse.
<i>Múcho, muy,</i>	Much, very.
<i>Muy santaménte,</i>	Very holily.
<i>Muy doctaménte,</i>	Very learnedly.
<i>Bonissimaménte,</i>	Most excellently.
<i>Principalissimaménte,</i>	Most principally.
<i>Fortissimaménte,</i>	Most valiantly, most cou- ragiously.

*Aduerbs Personals.*

<i>Comigo,</i>	With me.
<i>Contigo,</i>	With thee.
<i>Consigo,</i>	With him.

*Aduerbs appellatines.*

<i>Ola óla,</i>	Hola ho.
<i>O cómo se llama?</i>	O whats the name ont?
<i>A quien digo?</i>	To whom doe I speake?
<i>Ha Señor,</i>	Ah Sir.
<i>Cece,</i>	Heareme a word.

*Aduerbs of Choosfing.*

<i>Antes, mas ántes,</i>	Rather, sooner.
<i>Priméro que,</i>	Rather then, before that.
<i>Mejór,</i>	Better.
<i>Mas áyna,</i>	Rather.

*Priméro* is vsed thus, *Priméro me moriré que haga ésto*, I will rather die then doe it. *Áyna*, is taken also for

for an Aduerbe of time, as may be seene in this pro-  
uerbe following,

*Da Diós álas a la hormíga, pára que se piérda mas áyna.*

God giueth wings to the Ant, that she may perish  
the sooner.

*Aduerbs of Hastfing.*

<i>Luégo, súbito,</i>	Presently, on a sudden.
<i>En un mométo,</i>	In a moment.
<i>Apriéssa, présto,</i>	Apace, quickly: as, <i>Da te priéssa</i> , make haste.
<i>Pressurosaménte,</i>	Hastily, speedily.
<i>A gran priéssa,</i>	In great haste.
<i>Arrebatadaménte,</i>	Suddenly, snatchingly.
<i>En un cerrár de ójos,</i>	In the twinckling of an cie.

*Aduerbs of Likeness.*

<i>Cómo, así cómo,</i>	As, so as.
<i>Semejanteménte,</i>	In like sort.
<i>De la manera que,</i>	In such manner that.
<i>Désta manera,</i>	In this sort.
<i>De aquella manera,</i>	After that fashion.
<i>Así,</i>	So.
<i>Cáfi,</i>	Almost.

*Aduerbs irregulars.*

There are found some Aduerbs Irregular, which  
are,

<i>De camino, de passáda,</i>	By the way.
<i>Altravés,</i>	Acrosse, ouerthwart.
<i>Alreués,</i>	Quite contrary, backward.
<i>Arecúlas,</i>	Arseward.

*De cuándo en cuándo,* Now and then, from time to time.

*De brúces,* With the face downward.  
*Agátas,* On all foure, as a dog or cat.  
*A tiénto,* By ghesse, at randome.  
*A tuérto,* Wrongfully.

*Embálde, debálde,* In vaine, Gratis, and for nothing.

*A trueque, en lugar,* In change, In stead of.  
*Andár en cueros,* To goe naked.

*Andár en púras carnes,* Idcm.

*Andár en cuérpo,* To goe in hose and doublet, without a cloake.

*Ofrecer a algúno las áncas,* To offer one to ride behind him.

*Tr a canállo en cérrro,* To ride bare ridged.  
*Hablár de oydas,* To speake by hearesay.

*Comér pan en exútas, or* To eat drie bread.

*a sécas,*

*Estár en ayúnas,* To be fasting.

*Boluer a vazías,* To returne empty.

*Matár a mordidas,* To kill with biting.

*Passár a nádo,* To swim, ouer.

To the Aduerbe *renés*, answereth *derécho*, which signifieth, Right. Example: *El fáyo está del renés, boluédo lo del derécho*; The coat is the inside outward, turne it right. *Tódo cuánto auéys dicho, es al renés*, All that you haue said is cleane contrary. Likewise, *Vos soys al renés de los ótros*, You are contrary from the rest. *De brúces*, is vsed commonly with the Verbe *Echárse*: as, *Echárse de brúces*, To cast himselfe or lie downe on his belly with his face towards the ground: *beuér de brúces*, To drinke at a fountaine lying

lying on the stomach; *caér de brúces*, to fall with ones face against the earth. *Caér de colodrillo*, is put for the contrary; which is to say, to tumble backward, for *colodrillo* signifieth the hinder part of the head.

These two Aduerbs *embálde* and *debálde*, are very different in signification, for *embálde* signifieth in vaine, and to no end: as for Example: *Embálde os trabajáys*, You labour in vaine, or you lose your labour; but *debálde* signifieth Gratis, without recompence: as, *To híze ésto debálde*, I did that for thanks, without recompence, for nothing. It may sometimes also signifie good cheape, but there is a word more proper, which is *baráto*.

These two others, *a trueque* and *en lugar*, haue almost one signification, and require an Ablatiue case after them: as, *A trueque*, or, *En lugar de vuestro canállo*, *Yo os daré el mío*; In change, or in stead of your horse I will giue you mine.

### *Of the Prepositions.*

IT will be sufficient to put downe all the Prepositions with their significations, to know the vse of them, for so much as they be not construed as in Latine, for some serue indifferently to the Accusatiue & to the Ablatiue, and some others to the datiuue, which shall be knowne by the Article *de* or *a*, adioyned vnto them, but let vs come first to those seruing to the Ablatiue.

*De,*  
*Cérca,*  
*Decérca,*  
*Antes,*

Of.  
 Neere.  
 At hand.  
 Before.

<i>Acérca,</i>	Touching, concerning.
<i>Désta parte,</i>	From this time or part.
<i>A ésta parte,</i>	To this time, or part.
<i>Déste cabo,</i>	Of this end.
<i>En derredór,</i>	Round about.
<i>Al derredór,</i>	Idem.
<i>Entórno,</i>	About.
<i>Fuera,</i>	Without.
<i>Dentro,</i>	Within.
<i>Debáxo,</i>	Vnder.
<i>Encima,</i>	Vpon.
<i>Ayúso, de yúso, abáxo,</i>	Below, beneath.
<i>Arriba,</i>	Above.
<i>De súso,</i>	Idem.
<i>De trás,</i>	Behind.
<i>Empos del,</i>	After him.
<i>Cérca de mí, En in</i> <i>podér y señoría,</i>	Neere about me, that is, In my power.
<i>Por amor de mí,</i>	For my sake, for my cause.
<i>Después,</i>	After.
<i>A escondidas de mí,</i>	Vnknowne, or vnawares to me.
<i>En frén-te, de frén-te,</i>	Ouer against, opposite.
<i>A la orílla,</i>	Along by the shore.
<i>A rayz de la pared,</i>	A long by the wall.
<i>Ribéras,</i>	At the shore, or banke.

All which doe require the particle *de*; as, *Cérca de mí*, Neere about me: *Acérca déste negocio*, Concerning this affaire: *Désta parte de dos años*, or *de dos años, á ésta parte*, Since this time two yeares: *En derredór del muro*, Round about the wall: *En derredór* is also found without a case, but it is then vnderstood: as, *Estána todo en derredór cercádo de piedra*, It

It was compassed quite round about with stone. *Entórno* serueth to the Dative; as, *Entórno à la cápa*, Round about the cloake: *Fuera*, is found with a case, and without; as, *fuera de la tierra*, out of the country; and, *Es ydo fuera*, He is gone forth; but this last is rather an Aduerbe of Place. *Arriba*, is found alwaies without a case, by reason that it ought not to be a Preposition, but an Aduerbe.

I haue put this particle *de* in the first place, which is so common amongst the Spaniards, that it is found before all Infinitive Moods, after these Verbs, *Déne, tiéne, ha*, as, *Déne de ser assi*; *déne de dezír, verdád*; *Tiéne de hazér, Ha de llamar, Haurá de llorar*, and an infinite company more.

*Prepositions serving to the Accusative case.*

<i>Sobre, acuéstas,</i>	Vpon or above, vpon him.
<i>Ante, contra,</i>	Before, against.
<i>Aquén-de, allén-de,</i>	On this side, beyond.
<i>Por, pára,</i>	For and by, For.
<i>Sáuo, excépto,</i>	Sauing, except.
<i>Sacándo fuera,</i>	Out setting.
<i>Ségun,</i>	According, according as.
<i>Íunto,</i>	Close by, neere vnto.
<i>Hásta, sin,</i>	Vntill or so farre as, without.
<i>Con, en,</i>	With, in or into.
<i>Entre, házia,</i>	Betweene or amongst, towards.
<i>Cábe, tras,</i>	Neere, after.

This Preposition *acuéstas*, which is in Italian *addosso*, signifieth, vpon the person in what place soeuer it be; vpon the head, vpon the backe, vpon the shoulders, or elsewhere. Example. *Si creyera à Celestina*

*stina con sus seis docenas de años acuéstas, &c.* If I had beleued *Celestine* with her six dosen of yeares ouer her head. Another Example: *Al passár del río tomé le acuéstas y le lleué a la ótra párté,* At the passing of the riuer I rooke him vpon my shoulders, or vpon my backe, and caried him to the other side. Likewise, *To no tengo dinéros acuéstas,* I haue no money about me, for it would not be good English to say vpon me.

There is yet found an *acuéstas*, in another signification, but it is not a Preposition, and it ought to be written thus distinguished, *a cuéstas*, for it is as much as *a cósta*, which is to say, at the cost or charges: and it is construed with these three Pronounes, *mis, tus, sus*, interposing them betweene *a* and *cuéstas*, as, *A mis cuéstas, a tus cuéstas, a sus cuéstas*; At my cost, at thy cost, at his cost: but it is better said, *a mi cósta*: The same may be vsed without these Pronounes, hauing a Noun expresse; as, *a cuéstas de Pedro N.* At the charges of Peter N. Yet I finde *a cósta de Pedro N.* to be farre the better.

*Ante* and *antes*, are different, in that *ante* signifieth *coram* in Latine, that is to say, In presence, and before the person; which signification denoteth neither time nor place: and *antes* is as much as the Latine *ante*, and signifieth before, denoting the time and place; but being put without a case, it loseth the nature of a Preposition, and is made an Aduerbe, signifying in English, Rather, and in Latine, *imò* or *potius*.

*Cóntra*, doth sometimes signifie, opposite, or ouer against, but it is better said *En frén-te* or *de frén-te*, which are Prepositions of the Ablatiue case.

*Aquén-de el már,* On this side the sea, *Allén-de el río,* Beyond the Riuer.

*Por*

*Por* and *pára*, both which in Italian signifie *per*, are different in Latine, Spanish, French, and also in English; for *por*, is as much as the Latine Prepositions, *per* and *propter*: and *pára* hath the force of *pro* and *ad*. The first, which is *por*, signifieth the efficient cause, and also the finall. Example of the efficient: *Lo que por mi persón: yo no pudiére acabár,* To tentaré de hazérlo por ótro, That which I shall not be able to effect by my owne person, I will endeuour to performe it by meanes of another. Example of the finall: *Por mi se ha hécho quistión,* There was a quarrell made for my sake: *Han venído por mi,* They haue come for me: *Uóy por vino y por água,* I goe for wine and for water: *Por amor de Diós,* For Gods sake, or for the loue of God. *To muéro por ti*; I die for thee. In these Examples it is seene that *por* signifieth as well For as By, the said For being a Preposition of the finall cause, which is in Latine *propter*: and By, of the efficient cause, being said in Latine *per*. It hath moreover sometimes the force of To, in English: as, *Aun está por nascér quien lo hága,* He that shall doe it, is yet to be borne: *Aun está por hazér,* It is yet to doe. *Pára* either signifieth profit or dammage to the person: as, *Pára quien es ésto?* For whom is this? *Es pára mi*; It is for me: *El daño será pára mi, Y el prouécho pára ti,* The losse or dammage shall be for me, and the profit for thee.

*Paraque* and *porque*, compounded of these two and of *que*, are Aduerbs and Coniunctions, where it is spoken of their significations.

These three, *sá-luo*, *excépto*, *sacándo fué-ra*, are Exceptiues. *Ség-un*, is a Preposition and an Aduerbe, hauing the same signification in the one, as in the other. Example: *Ség-un díze Aristóteles,* According

N

as



as Aristotle saith : *Ségun su parecer*, According to his opinion. *junto*, is put also before the Dative : as, *junto à mi, junto à ti*, Hard by mee, close by thee.

*Hásta*, is thus vsed : *Hásta la casa*, As farre as the house ; *hásta mañana*, Till to morrow. I haue sometimes read *hásta*, hauing the signification of *de aquí* or *de allí*, as, *hásta séys días salió toda la gente de guerra que se auia detenido en las guarniciones*, Six daies after all the men of warre went forth that had remained in the Garrisons.

*Con*, signifieth With, and is compounded with the Pronounes, *mi, ti, si*, taking away *n* ( for the most part ) in the composition of the first, and adioyning *go*, to all three, whereof are formed, *comigo, contigo, consigo*, with me, with thee, with him, or with it. The said Preposition *con*, hauing *para* before it, altereth his signification, and both together are as much as *Erga* in Latine : as, *Seámos piadosos para con los pobres*, Let vs be pittifull towards the poore, or in the behalfe of the poore : So likewise, *Para comigo*, towards me, *Para contigo*, towards thee, *Para consigo*, towards him, or in his behalfe : *Para con todos es liberal y franco*, He is liberall and francke towards all.

*Házia*, which is sometimes written *hácia*, signifieth Towards : as, *házia casa*, towards home ; *házia el Oriente*, towards the East, or Orient : but it is to be pronounced with the accent vpon the first syllable, to make a difference from *hazía*, the first and third person Imperfect of the Indicative Mood of the Verbe *hazer*, which is accented vpon the penultima.

*Tras* signifieth After, as, *Tras los días viene el seseo*, wit or vnderstanding comes after many daies. *Tras su desseo, camina cada vno*, Euery man trauels after his owne desire. I remember that I haue read, *Tras la llane*,

*llane*, to say as we doe in English, vnder locke and key, but this is a propriety of the Language. *Cábe Neere*, or close by ; *Siénte se cábe mi*, Sit you close by me.

### *Of the Coniunctions.*

OF Coniunctions there be some that both binde the words and their signification, and they are called Copulatiues : Others are disiunctiues, separating the sense, and conioyning onely the words : Others also be called Casualls or Conditionals, declaring the causes of the things : yet others Rationals, which some doe name Collectiues : and finally Aduersatiues, by which is demonstrated that what we say can neither hurt nor hinder.

*The Copulatiues are,*

Y or è,  
*También, aun,*

And.  
Also, yet.

Many times *también* and *aun* are compounded with the first, *Y*, for the greater affirmation : as, *To bize esto, Y también essótro*, I did this and also that. *To te daré esto, Y aun mas*, I will giue thee this, and yet more.

I haue found a certaine difference betweene *también* and *aun*, which is, that *también* regardeth the agent or efficient : and *aun* is referred to the patient or materiall, but this shall be only for the studious, without giuing any examples hereof.

*The Disjunctives.*

<i>Ni ; o,</i>	Neither, nor ; either, or.
<i>Ni el uno, ni el otro,</i>	Neither the one, nor the other.
<i>O ésto, ô éssôtro,</i>	Either this, or that.

*The Casualls or Conditionals.*

<i>Si ; aunque,</i>	If ; although.
<i>Dádoque, puésto que,</i>	Albeit, say that.
<i>Puésto caso que,</i>	Put case that.
<i>Pnés que, pára que,</i>	Seeing that, to the end that,
<i>cómo si,</i>	as if.
<i>Por que, que,</i>	Because, for.
<i>Mas, mas si,</i>	But, but if.
<i>Péro, ántes,</i>	But, rather.
<i>Si que, or Se que,</i>	It is well knowne.
<i>Después que, Yá que,</i>	After that, seeing that.
<i>Por lo qual, porénde,</i>	By which, therefore.
<i>Por la qual cosa,</i>	For the which thing.
<i>Con tal que,</i>	So that, conditionally that.
<i>Con condición que,</i>	With condition that.
<i>Empéro,</i>	Notwithstanding.
<i>Tóda vía,</i>	Notwithstanding, neuertheless.
<i>A lo ménos, si quiéra,</i>	At the least, at leastwise.
<i>De ótra manera,</i>	Otherwise.

Amongst these Conditionals are inserted the Aduersatiues, which be,

*Aunque, dádoque, puéstoque, puésto casoque,* all which doe signifie alike ; and moreouer *empéro* and *todavía*. These three *mas, péro, ántes,* are Aduersatiues or Exceptiues. *Si*, is properly a Conditionall, not being an Affirmatiue. *Cómo*, is often vsed with *si*,

*si*, in this manner : *Cómo si fuéa el Réy, así mandáua a los ótros* ; As if he had beene King, so he commanded the rest : *Cómo si no tuuiéssese hazer*, As if he had nothing to doe. *Porque* is as well an Interrogatiue, as a Confirmatiue or Casuall, and signifieth as in Latine, *Quare* and *quia*, in English, wherefore and because.

*Con tal que, con condición que,* and *con tal condición que*, haue but one signification : as, *Yo haré éssó con tal que vos hagáys lo que os he dicho*, I will doe that, provided that you doe what I haue told you. *Con condición que me esperéys Yo yré*, vpon condition that you stay for me I will goe.

*A lo ménos* and *si quiéra*, doe signifie both one thing : as, *Pues auémos gastádo la harina, demos a Dió si quiéra los salvá los*, Seeing we haue spent the meale, let vs giue to God at leastwise the branne. *Dádme a lo ménos*, Giue me at the leastwise.

*The Rationals.*

<i>Ansí que, porque,</i>	So that, because or for that.
<i>Porque a la verdád,</i>	For to speake the truth.
<i>Cierto, es a saber,</i>	Truly, to wit.
<i>Conuiéne a saber,</i>	To wit, that is to say.
<i>Luégo,pués,</i>	Then, or therefore.
<i>Por éssó, por tanto,</i>	For that, therefore.

These two *Luégo* and *Pnés*, in this signification, are both Englished Then, and sometimes Therefore : for *Luégo*, in another sense, signifieth Presently ; and is then an Aduerbe of time. *Pnés* in another nature is taken for Seeing, or Seeing that : and in the beginning of a Period, or whatsoeuer discourse,

it signifieth, Now : as, *Estáua pués toda la gente de guerra à punto para peleár* ; Now all the men of war stood in readinesse to fight : And note that although *Pués* be the first, second, or third word of the period, it retaineth this signification.

### *Of the Interiections.*

**I**nteriections are a kinde of words, that expresse an alteration of the minde or spirit, according to the accidents that happen to the person, signifying Ioy or pleasure, Griefe, Feare, Indignation, or Admiration: as,

<i>O bueno, hála hála ;</i>	Oh good, oh that's gallant.
<i>hála gála,</i>	
<i>Ay or háy ; Ay de mi,</i>	Alas ; alas for me.
<i>Guáy, guáy de mi,</i>	Ah, woe is me.
<i>O desdichádo de mi,</i>	O vnfortunate man that I am.
<i>Amárgo de mi,</i>	Griued man that I am.
<i>Cuystádo de mi,</i>	Wretched man that I am.

*Hax* and *box*, are two Interiections, the first whereof is vsed when one feeleth any smarting paine, being somerimes adioyned to other words: as, *Ax que me quéma*, Ah it scaldeth me. *Ox*, is vsed when we will not haue any thing ; as, *Oxe à fuéra*, that is to say, Away with that ; He doe nothing with it : and it also serueth to driue away poultry and birds, redoubling the word *Ox ox* : It is vsed moreover for the chasing of Coneys or Rabbits, whereof is formed the Noun *Oxéo de áues*, or *de Conejos*, and the Verbe *Oxeár áues*, *oxeár Conejos*, which is to driue away with crying Shue, shue.

*Iesús*

*Iesús, vála me Diós,* Iesus, God helpe me.  
*Diós me libre,* God deliuer me.

### *An end of the parts of speech.*

Having generally spoken of the parts of speech, and in my opinion sufficiently giuen to vnderstand the significations of the same, I haue not thought it from the purpose to annex a brieve collection and obseruation, as well of words simple, which haue diuers significations, as of certaine formes of speaking, proper and particular to the Spanish tongue, which would be difficult to be vnderstood.

It is requisite then first of all to speake of the words simple, as of *áy* the Aduerbe, and *áy* the Verbe, which should be written *háy* to know their difference the better. Yet since it consisteth not in writing, but only in pronounciation, it behoueth to note that *áy* the Aduerbe is to be expresseed with the accent vpon the *y*, making it to be very much sounded, as a disyllabe, and hauing a short and separated from it. But *áy* or *háy* the Verbe, shall bee pronounced with the accent vpon *a* or *ha*, sounding the finall *y* but little, as if it were but a monosyllable. The first which is an Aduerbe of place, signifieth in English, There : and the other that commeth from the Verbe *hauér*, signifieth There is, and There are.

### *Example of the First.*

*Quien está ay?* Who is there?  
*Ay está mi hermano ;* My brother is there ;  
N 4

Of

## Of the Second.

<i>Que áy de nueuo?</i>	What newes is there?
<i>Que háy de comér?</i>	What is there to eat?
<i>No áy náda que dezír,</i>	There is nothing to say.
<i>No áy que hazér,</i>	There is nothing to doe.

And the said *áy* is coniugated almost thorowout all the Moods and Tenses, but only in the third person of the singular, being properly a Verbe Impersonall, which signifieth in Latine *est* or *sunt*, for it is construed with the singular and plurall number: as, *No áy mas de un hombre*; There is but one man. *Mas áy de quatro*, There are aboute foure: And it is thus declined.

<i>Ay,</i>	There is, there are.
<i>Auía, úuo,</i>	There was, there were.
<i>Ha auído,</i>	There hath bin, there haue beene.
<i>Auía auído,</i>	There had beene.
<i>Aurá,</i>	There shall or will be.
<i>Aya,</i>	Let there be.
<i>Plega a Dios, Aunque,</i>	God grant, Although,
<i>Aya,</i>	There be.
<i>Oxala, Aunque,</i>	Would to God, Although,
<i>Vuiéssse, vuiéra,</i>	There were.
<i>Oxala, Aunque,</i>	I pray God, Although,
<i>Aya auído,</i>	There haue beene.
<i>Oxala, Aunque,</i>	Would to God, Although,
<i>Vuiéra,</i>	There had beene.
<i>Vuiéssse &amp; Vuiéra auído,</i>	There had beene, there would or should haue bin.
<i>Auria,</i>	There should be.

*Quando*

*Quando Vuiére,*  
*Si Vuiére,*

*Vuiére auído,*  
*Hauér, ha de auér,*  
*Aurá de auér,*

When there shall or will be.  
If there be.

There shall haue beene.  
To be, there ought to be.  
It shall or will be requisite  
that there be.

Likewise for the Imperfect, *Auía de auér*, There did ought to be &c. taking onely the third person of euery Tense, with the said Infinitive Mood.

This variation or declining is only the third person of *Hauér*, as may be seene, excepting the Present of the Indicative, *áy*, which admitteth not *ha*: Notwithstanding when one will denote a space of time, be it by interrogation or otherwise, it behoueth to vse the said *ha*, and not *áy*. Example: *Quánto ha que vino el Señor?* How long is it since my Lord came? *Días ha* many daies agoe: where it behoueth to vnderstand *Tiempo*, as who should say, *Quánto tiempo ha?* How long is it agoe? *Dies años ha?* It is ten yeares agoe.

There is moreouer found a third *áy* or *háy*, which is an Interiection of Sorrow; but it ought to be pronounced with a greater aspiration then that of the Verbe, sounding the *ha* very clearly.

The particle *des*, which is a Preposition inseparable, is only found in composition, not signifying any thing simple, and serueth to declare the default, contrariety, or priuation of the thing: as, *Desfónra*, dishonour; *desdicha*, mishap; *desuentura*, misfortune; *deshecho*, vndone; *desarmado*, vnarmed; *desatinado*, Brain-sicke; *desuergonzado*, Shamelesse; and others of the like composition, where it is seene that *des*, is a priatiue of the thing signified by the Noun that is adioyned vnto it.

S be-

*S* before *r* is lost, and the said *r* doubled, as in *Derramar*, *derretir*, *derribar*, *derrocar*, &c.

It commeth here fit vnto the purpose to say that oftentimes the *s* which is found before *r*, ( be it in one word onely or the said *s* being the finall, before another that beginneth with *r* ) suffereth the same change in pronounciation, but not in writing, as may be seene in these words: *Israël*, *los reyes*, *los rebeldes*, *las rameras*, *las rayzes*, and other the like; which ought to be pronounced as being written, *Irrael*, *lorreyes*, *lorrebeldes*, *larrameras*, *larrayzes*.

*Re* is also a Preposition inseparable of the same nature of *des*, but contrary in signification, for it augmenteth and doubleth the thing: as, *Hazer*, *rehazer*, To doe, to doe againe: *To la he mirado*, *y aun remirado*, I haue beheld her, and beheld her againe.

#### Of the word *Hidepúta*.

The Spaniards haue a certaine exclamation or Interiection of admiring, to wit, *Hideputa*, which is vsed in comparisons to mocke or deride some person, declaring them not to be such as they ought: as, *O hideputa*, *y que Roldán para hazer fieros*? O what a Roland to make brauadoes, or boast? *O hideputa y que Nembroth*, *que magno Alexandre*? O what a Nembroth, what a great Alexander? this example is taken out of *Celestine*. *O hideputa y que hombre eres*? O what a man thou art? *O hideputa y que consejero nos es venido*? O what a counsellor is come vnto vs? And so many other examples of this sort. But when this word is spoken in oholer and by iniury, it signifieth as much as *Hijo de puta*, being abridged by Syncope, as may be seene in the word *Hidálgo*, which

which maketh ( being put at large ) *Hijo dálgo*, and so is *hideputa* said for *hijo de puta*. It is found in composition with this Verbe Imperatiue *andád*, which may fitly be applied to iniuries with the Preposition *para*, as, *Andád para hideputa*; Get thee gone for the sonne of a whore: *Andád para vellaco*, *ruín*, *pérro*, *móro*, *Indio*, *ladrón*, *heréje*, *púto*: Get thee gone for a villaine as thou art, a lewd creature, dog, Moore, Jew, theefe, heretike, buggerer. *Hideputa ruín*, vngracious whores sonne, or sonne of a whore: *Hidruín*, is said for *hijo de ruín*.

#### Of the word *Hidálgo*.

I haue already giuen some light of the word *Hidálgo*, which is as I haue said abridged from *hijo dálgo*, the Feminine whereof *hidálga*, I haue neither read nor heard spoken, but *Hija dálgo*.

The first which is *Hidálgo*, or *hijo dálgo*, signifieth a Gentleman; and *hija dálgo*, a Gentlewoman: From them is deriued *hidalgua*, which signifieth Nobilitie.

The Etymologie of *hidálgo* or *hijo dálgo*, is amply declared in *Examen de los ingenios*, where the studious may see it at their pleasure; yet because the booke by reason of his scarcenesse, is not in all places to be had, I will speake thereof a little by the way. It be- houeth to know that he maketh a comparison of the word *álgo*, whereof the diction is compounded, and of his contrary which is *náda*, the first signifying in Latine *aliquid*, and in English, something, the other *nihil*, nothing. Now he referreth the said *náda* to the fault or vice, which is rightly said, nothing. And by *álgo*, he vnderstandeth the vertue; being willing to

to inferre that *hijo d'algo*, signifieth sonne of vertue, or of vertuous workes, for I cannot well say in English, Sonne of something, although the Spanish doe so signifie.

It will yet be requisite to say concerning this word *mercé*, that the Spaniards doe not alwaies reply it either in speaking or writing, but doe put the Relative for the same, as to say, *V. M. me haga mérced desto*, they will speake thus; *V. M. me la haga desto*: In such sort that the Article *la* Relative, is as much as *mercé*. They will say moreouer, *La de v. m. recibí*, whereto must be vnderstood *carta*, to signifie, I receiued your letter: And in saluting one that shall say, *Beso las manos de v. m.* they will answer, *é yo las de v. m.* Notwithstanding if two vnequall in quality doe chance to meet, the lesser hauing said to the greater, *Beso las manos de v. m.* the greater shall not answer him, *é yo las de v. m.* but shall say, *Servidór de v. m.* in case the inequality be not very great betweene them: for otherwise it should not be fitting for the greater to abase himselfe so much, but should say according to the quality of his inferiour, *Buena noche tenga*, or *bien venido sea el Señor Fulano*, or else, *V. M. sea bien venido*: And contrariwise it shall not be fitting for the meaner to say to his superiour, *Servidór de v. m.* or *de v. Señoría*, for that *beso las manos*, is more humble.

I haue said *v. m. sea bien venido*, not *venida*, as some not well experienced in the language doe say, thinking that the Adiectiue ought to agree with *v. mérced*, but I aduertise them, that it must alwaies accord with the gender of the person to whom they write or speake, for if it be to a man, it behoueth to speake it in the Masculine Gender: as *V. Md. V. Sa.*

*Sa. V. Ex. V. Al. V. Mag<sup>d</sup>. V. Sant<sup>d</sup>. sea bien venido*. But if it be to a woman, it shall be requisite to take the Feminine, and say, *bien venida*. And if it happen that they speake to two persons of a different sexe, the Masculine shall beare it, and they shall say, *Vuestras mercedes sean bien venidos*, and not *venidas*. And in like case if they specifie both the Genders, the Masculine shall be preferred: as, *Fulano tiene un esclauo y una esclaua muy buenos*.

Some might here ground a scruple concerning that which I haue said, that the Adiectiue accordeth with the Gender of the person, thinking that *Vuestro* and *Vuestra* should be comprehended vnder this rule, as being Adiectiues: but to take away the difficulty hereof, I will say that this ought not to be vnderstood but of the Adiectiue which commeth after: for *vuestro* or *vuestra*, shall still agree with the word adioyned, without hauing regard to the person, for it shall not be said *vuestro mérced*, but *vuestra mérced*, and in the plurall as well to men as women, they shall say *vuestras mercedes*, that is, to men, *vuestras mercedes son buenos*, and to women, *vuestras mercedes son buenas*.

#### Of the Comparisons proper to the Spanish Tongue.

It must not be forgotten to say, that in this language there be often vsed comparisons, and in diuers manner, to wit in demonstrating, asking the question, affirming, and denying, whereof I will put downe a certaine quantity of examples, the greater part of them being taken out of *Miranda's Grammar*, to which I will adioyne the English.

And

*And first in Demonstrating and affirming: as,*

*Es mas bláncó que la niene,*

It is more white, or whiter then snow.

*Es mas negro que la pez,*

It is blacker then pitch.

*Es mas pegajoso que la enadúra,*

It is more clammy then leauen.

*Es mas amargo que la biél,*

It is more bitter then gall.

*Es mas dulce que la miél,*

It is sweeter then hony.

*Es mas duro que una piedra,*

It is harder then a stone.

*Es mas bráuo que un León,*

It is, or he is fiercer then a Lion.

*Es mas manso que una ouéja,*

It is, or he is more gentle then a sheepe.

*Es mas súzio que un puérco,*

It is, or he is fouler then a hogge.

*By forme of Interrogation.*

*Térna en ti, que haría mas un salto de juj-zio?*

Returne to thy selfe, what should a man doe more that were depriued of iudgement?

*Que haría mas un hombre idiota, un loco?*

What should an Idiot doe more, a foole?

*Que mayor locura puede auer en el mundo?*

What greater folly can there be in the world?

*Que haría mas un salto de experiéncia y de todo consejo?*

What should one doe more, that wanteth experience and all counsell?

*Que*

*Que haría mas uno que uniése nacido entre las bestias fieras?*

What should one doe more, that had been borne amongst sauage beasts?

*Que haría mas un Cicerón? Un Virgilio? Un Aristóteles?*

What should a Cicero doe more? a Virgil? an Aristotle?

*Que haría mas el mayor letrado del mundo?*

What should the greatest scholler of the world doe more?

*De dónde mas ser me puede venir en el mundo que deste vuestro fauor?*

From whence can there greater aduancemēt come vnto me in the world thē from this your fauour?

*De dónde mas fama? mas prosperidad? mas riqueza?*

From whence more renoune? more prosperity? greater riches?

*De dónde mas bien? mas salud, mas honrra, mas grauedad, mayor bienauenturança?*

From whence more good? more health, more honour, more grauitie, greater felicitie?

*Hay en el mundo mas desdichado hombre que yo? no por ciérto.*

Is there in the world a more vnhappy man then I? no certainly.

*Ay mas affligido hombre que yo?*

Is there a more afflicted man then I am?

*Hay hombre que mas le pèse de vivir? no ciérto.*

Is there a man more weary of his life? surely no.

*Ay hombre mas dichoso ni mas bien auenturado? ciérto no.*

Is there a man more happy, or more fortunate? certainly no.

And so of diuers other sorts of comparisons that may be made in forme of interrogations.

There



There is yet an infinite company of others like these that follow.

*Vengo tan cargado de buenas nuevas, como el abeja viene a la colmena en tiempo de mucha flor.*

*Vengo tan contento como Roldán en ganar su espada.*

*Huelgo tanto de verte como si huviéra dos años que no te huviéra visto.*

*Es como una nieve.*

*Es como hecho de perlas.*

*Es como el perro del hortelano, que no come las verbas, ni las dexa comer a otros.*

*Es como unto de mona, que no es bueno para nada.*

*Es como gallina que escarnando halla el cuchillo con que la degüellen.*

*Es como el conejo, que huyendo del perro, cayó en el lazo.*

I come as well loaden with good newes, as the Bee cometh to the hiue in such time as there is store of flowers.

I come as well content as Roland in winning his sword.

I am as glad to see thee, as if I had not seene thee these two yeares.

She is like snow, or as white as snow.

It is made as it were of pearles.

He is like the Gardiners dog, that neither eateth the coleworts, nor suffereth them to be eaten of others.

It is like the fat of a Monkie, which is good for nothing.

He is like the Hen that scraping findeth the knife with which they doe behead her.

Hee is like the Cony that flying from the dog, fell into the snare.

To

To signifie things impossible and to no purpose, it shall be said.

*Es como dar con el puño en el cielo,*

*Escómo echár lánças en la mar,*

*Escómo dar bózes al desierto,*

*Es cómo cogér água en cesto,*

*Escómo andár á caza sin perro.*

*Es cómo querér bolár sin alas,*

It is as one should strike against heauen.

It is as to cast lances into the sea.

It is like as to cry out in a desert.

It is as to carry water in a basket.

It is as to goe a hunting without a dogge.

It is as to bee willing to fly without wings.

### *Examples with the Negative.*

*No holgó tanto Antipatro con las saludes escritas en la carta del grande Alexandro quanto yo me holgué con la tuya; ni tan grata fue al Senado la Solercia del niño Papirio, quanto a mis ojos es tu sobrada hermosura y gracia.*

*O que gran merced! por cierto la que hizo el grande Alexandro al Atheniense Phoción, ni la que hizo Catón a los ciudadanos de Utica, no*

Antipater was not so much reioyced with the salutes that Alexander the great sent him in his letter, as I was of receiuing thine; nor was the subtilty of the boy Papirius so pleasing to the Senate, as is unto my eies thy excessiue beauty and grace.

O how great a fauour! certainly that which Alexander the great shewed to Phoción the Athenian, nor that which Cato did to the Cittizens of Utica, can

O any



*se yguálan con hártá* any wise correspond with  
*párte à la que tu me has* that which thou hast done  
*hecho.* me.

I might here put downe many other examples, but by reason they doe not make much for the Grammar, being rather parts of Rhetoricke, I will leaue them to returne to the particularities of words.

#### Of *Acabár*.

*Acabár*, doth properly signifie to atchieue, finish, and cometo the end of a thing. *No puedo acabar conmigo*, I cannot get or obtaine of my selfe. The Spaniards vse *acabár*, to make the person cease or be quiet, that doth something at which they are offended: as, *Acábe v. m. por su vida*; Let it alone, or be quiet I pray you: *Ea por amor de Dios acábe*, Nay for Gods sake, or for the loue of God let it alone. *Acábe, no me digas mas*; Leaue, say no more to me. *Acábe que eres necio*; Haue done, for thou art a foole: but it should be pronounced with disdain to giue it the greater grace. Looke amongst the Aduerbs of Admonishing.

#### Of the Verbe *Alcançar*.

This Verbe *Alcançar*, besides diuers significations, as, to get, to obtaine, to reach vnto, to attaine, it hath yet another very different, *Alcançar en la cuenta*, To abate of the account or reckoning: *Alcançando de cuenta*, Yeelding ones selfe debtor for the residue of some payment.

It signifieth as well to pursue as to attaine; as, *Alcançar lo que huye*, To attaine or ouertake that which flyeth, and, *Alcançar los enemigos*, To pursue the enemies:

enemies: *Tua al alcáçe de los enemigos*, He went to the pursuit of the enemies.

#### Of the Verbe *Alçár*.

*Alçár*, signifieth properly to lift vp, to heaue, to erect, but in composition it hath other different significations, as may be seene by these examples. *Alçarse con el Réyno*, To reuolt, and make the kingdome reuolt by little and little; it is vnderstood of a Gouvernour of a Prouince, and the same may bee said of all kinde of gouernment. *Alçarse a su mano*, To vsay some promise that was made, and to reuoke it. *Alçarse con toda su hacienda*, To be packing with all his goods, and to goe from one countrey to another; properly to play Banckrupt. *Alçár el destierro*, To reuoke or recall the banishment.

#### Of the Verbe *Allegár*.

*Allegár*, is in English, To assemble, to heape vp, to approach, to arriue, to condescend, to consent, and to come. *Allegárse mucha gente*, Great store of people to be assembled. *Allegár muchos dineros*, To heape vp a great deale of money: *Allegárse al fuego*, To approach or come neere the fire. *Allegár o arribár al puerto*, To arriue at the Port. *Allegárse à la razón*, To come to the reason, to consent and condescend thereto.

#### Of the Verbe *Andár*.

For *Andár*, see at the end of his declining with the Verbe *Yr*, where is spoken both of the one and of the other, yet notwithstanding wee will hereafter speake something of the said *yr*.

Of the Verbe *Armár*.

*Armár*, signifieth, To arme, to bend, to set vp, to prepare: as, *Armár una celada*, To prepare an ambush: *Armár una ballésta*, To bend a Crossebow: *Armár una cama*, To set vp a bed. *El armazón de la cama*, The bedstead.

*Aperrochada*.

*Aperrochada*, which deriued of *Parróchia*, should signifie *Parrochiana*, a Parishionesse: But I haue read it in *Celestine*, where it hath the proper signification of a woman that hath many buyers, or customers.

*Ayúso* and *Abáxo*.

*Ayúso*, is as much as to say, *después*, After, and next vnto: as, *De Diós en ayúso yo le híze hombre*; After, or next vnto God I made him a man. *Abáxo*, seemeth to haue the same signification: as, *Del Rey abáxo*, After the king: *Mándame poner las manos del Rey abáxo, que yo lo haré por tu seruicio*, Command me to encounter with any man vnder the King, for I will doe it for thy seruice.

Of *Boluer*.

*Boluer*, signifieth to turne, to returne or come backe, to become, to restore. Examples of all these significations. *Al enemigo que buélue la espalda la puente de plata*; To the enemy that turneth his backe, it behoueth him to make a bridge of siluer. *No huye el que buélue a su casa*, He doth not fly that returneth to his house. *El se ha buélto loco por amóres*, He is become foolish for loue. *Buélue me mi dinero*, Giue, or restore me my money.

But

But beside all these significations, it hath another very different, as may be seene in this example: *Boluer por los suyos*, which is as much as to say in English, to doe for his, to take the part and the cause of his in hand. *Tornár*, signifieth the same thing in this sense: as, *O mi Señor, y mi Diós, si no tornas por mí*: O my Lord, and my God, if thou takest not my cause in hand.

*Abueltas*.

*Abueltas*, which should seeme to come of *boluer*, for that they say *buélto* and *buélta*, is neuertheless very different, for it hath the nature of a Preposition, signifying in English, with, or together with. Example: *Abueltas de otras cosas dióle una cadena de mucha valór*, together with other things he gaue him a chaine of great worth. *Abueltas del castigo muéstrales amor*, With chastisement he sheweth them loue.

*Cábo*, Noun.

*Cábo*, is vsed in diuers manners: as, *A cábo de tres días*, At three daies end: *al cábo estóy, no me digas mas*, I haue it, I vnderstand, say no more vnto me: *En mi cábo*, On my side: *hermósa por el cábo*, Extremely faire: *Tomár la cosa muy por el cábo*, To take the matter very straitly, in all extremitie.

*Cárgo*.

*Cárgo*, signifieth a burthen, a waight, a charge, and is also taken for an obligation: as, *Ser en cárgo*, To be obliged, or beholden: it may likewise bee vnderstood for the faith or conscience in affirming some matter: as, *a mi cárgo*, vpon my faith, in my conscience.

Of the Verbe *Caér*.

*Caér*, besides that it properly signifieth, to fall or tumble, is yet found in diuers other significations, whereof it is requisite to put downe examples: as, *Caér en alguna cosa*, To remember himselfe of something; *caér en la cuenta*, To remember himselfe of the account, and storie: *aun no cayó en v. m. quien es*, I cannot yet call to minde who you are. It signifieth morcouer, to vnderstand and to perceiue a thing; as, *Entiende v. m. esto que he dicho? aun no cayó en ello?* Vnderstand you this which I haue said? doe you not yet perceiue it? *No he aun caydo en ello*: I do not yet well vnderstand it, or comprehend it. *Caér en el rastro*, To finde out and take the trace. *De caída vamos*, We are ruined, as who should say, we are ready to fall into ruine.

Of the Verbe *Dar*.

This Verbe *dár*, is found vsed in certaine formes of speech, where it seemeth to haue some difficultie: as, *Dar en cara*, which signifieth, to reproach, to cast in ones teeth: *dar de punto en blanco*, To hit directly in the marke or white: *Dar con la carga en tierra*, To cast his burthen on the ground. *Dar consigo en algún lugar*, To arriue in some place; *Lazar de Tor. Antes que la noche viniéssse di conmigo en Torrijos*; Before night was come, I came vnto Torrijos. *Dar el parabien*, To congratulate or reioyce with one. I haue read *dar* in the signification of *hazer*, as in this example of *Cel. El diablo me da penar por el, &c.* The deuill maketh me to torment for him, &c. *Darse maña*, To vse agility. *Dióse tan buena maña*, He vsed such nimbleneisse or dexteritie.

Of

Of the Verbe *Dexár*.

The Verbe *dexár*, construed with the Pronoun reciprocally, and the particle *de*, signifieth to forbear or leaue off: as, *Déxate déssso*, Forbear thou that; *dexémonos déssso*, Let vs forbear, or leaue off that same. His proper signification is, to leaue.

Of the particle *De*.

This particle *de*, is found sometimes to haue the signification of *By*, in English, as in these examples. *Tirár de la capa*, To pull by the cloake: *lleuár del sobaco*, To leade by the arme, that is, vnder the arme at the arme hole: *asir de los brazos*, To take hold by the armes, *Celest. Tóma déssos pies a nuéstro amo*, Take our master by those feet: *Tirár del brazo*, To pull by the arme.

Of the Verbe *Echár*.

*Echár*, signifieth, to cast, to driue, to put, to impose, to make, to poure out: *Echár por tierra*, To cast on the ground: *Echár atrás*, To cast behinde or backward: *echár de fuera*, to driue out: *echár mano a la espada*, to put ones hand to the sword, *id est*, to draw the sword: *echár en sacro róto*, to put in a broken sacke: *echár tributo*, to impose tribute: *echár vando*, to make and proclaime an edict: *echarse en la cama*, to lie downe on the bed, or goe to sleepe: *echár agua*, to poure out water. *Echár a mal*, and *echár a perder*, doe properly signifie in English, to spoyle. I haue found in Monte-mayor, *echár menos*, signifying as much as, to haue want. See at the end of the third booke of *Diana. Y porque ya éran mas de tres horas*

*horas de la noche, aunque la Luna era tan clara, que me echaban menos el día, cenaron de lo que en sus currónes los pastores traían :* And because it was already about three hours of the night, although the Moone was so cleare, that they had no want of day, they supped of that which the Shepherds brought in their scrips.

*Likewise.*

*Ta los muertos me échan menos,  
Ténte los vivos no estó ; for estóy.*

I neither am o'th' number of the dead,  
Nor of the liuing can I well be sed.

It hath yet another signification differing from all the rest in this phrase: *Echár de ver*, which is to say, to perceiue.

*Of the Verbe Estár.*

I might here put downe many examples of the Verbe *estár*, which should be something different, but for that they may almost all bee explicated by the Verbe, to be, which is his proper signification, I will set downe but some certaine ones : as, *Está mal conmigo, y yo no estóy muy bien con el*, which is to say in English briefly, we are not well together, or we doe not agree well one with another. *Quién está mal con Dios, no puede hazér cosa buena*, Who is not in Gods grace, can doe nothing that is good. *No está en su seso*, He is not in his wits, He knoweth not what he doth. *En mi seso estóy*, I know well what I say, I doe not abuse my selfe. *Estóy en éllo*, I vnderstand it, I conceiue it well. *Estár sobre auiso*, To take heed of him- selfe.

Of

*Of the Verbe Hazér.*

*Hazér*, which is Englished, to doe, doth also signifie, to counterfeit, and make a shew : as, *Háze del bueno*, He counterfais the foole, or sot; *háze del loco*, He plaies the foole; *haz que no lo oyes*, Seeme, or make a shew not to heare it : *hazérse de nuevas*, To make a shew of not knowing a thing, as if it were new to him. It is moreouer vsed for the qualities of the time, or weather: as *háze frío*, It is cold; *háze calor*, It is hot; *háze viento*, It is windy; *háze lodo*, It is dirty; *háze claro, nublado*, It is cleare, it is cloudy weather : *háze niebla*, It is foggy or misty: *háze Sol, Luna*, The Sunne shines, the Moone shines : *háze sereno*, It is sweet or milde weather : *háze bueno*, It is fine weather

*Sereno*, is taken for the calme and temperate time in the euening, and not for cleare and faire weather, as may be seene in this example : *Guárdaos del sereno, que es malo para la cabeza*, Beware of the serene, for it is hurtfull for the head.

*Hazér mal a los cauállos*, To spurre and gall, or trauell horses ouer-hard. *Hazér rostro*, To make a face, but *rostro* signifieth properly the visage. *Hazér de un tiro dos cuchilladas*, to giue two flashes at one blow.

I haue found in *Miranda's Grammar*, *No hará carrera a un ciego*, to say, hee will not shew the way to a blinde man.

*Hauér.*

*Of the Verbe hauér*, I doe not remember to haue read any great difficulties : only I haue obserued *con quien lo has*, to signifie, to whom wilt thou it? see his declining, and also the beginning of this collection.

*Hállar.*

## Hallár.

Of this Verbe *hallár*, *Miranda* hath put downe some examples which doe not declare any difference as touching the signification, but serue to confirme the thing so much the better: as, *Halládo lo hauéis el comedór*, *halládo lo hauéis el beusdór*, *halládo lo hauéis el jugadór*; which signifie, you haue certainly found him the glutton, the drunkard, the gamester. I haue read in *Celestine*, *No me hállo de plazér y alegría*, which is vnderstood in English, I am quite transported with pleasure and ioy. *Dárse por halládo*, To discouer or declare himselfe.

Of the Verbe *Yr*.

Beside that which hath beene said of the verbe *Yr*, at the end of his declining, I haue obserued some formes of speaking, wherein it is vsed, that are something difficult: as, *Yr à la máno*, to let or hinder; as, *To lo auía hécho sino que me fue à la máno*, I had done it but that he hindred me. *Yr en çága*, to goe after, to be second; *No le yua en çága*, He was not his second, he gaue place to him in nothing. *Yr de gólpe*, or *Yr de tropél*, To goe in a troupe, to goe together in a throng.

I haue read *va* and *van*, for *es* and *son*: as, *Esta obrezilla va dirigida à N.* This little worke is adressed to N. *Estas histórias van disfrazadas debáxo de ótras nómbres*, These histories are disguised vnder other names.

Of the Verbe *lleuár*.

This Verbe *lleuár*, is as correlatiue opposite to *traér*, for that it signifieth to beare and carry, and

*traér*, to fetch and bring, but both signifie simply to lead and carry, and oftentimes the one is taken for the other, the rest of the significations being compounded: but besides them, they are found in certaine manners of speaking, where they doe much differ, as in these examples following: *Buén camíno lleua el negócio*, The affaires or businesse goes well: *le lleuan la péna*, They make him pay the fine or penalty: *lleuáron me médio escúdo por la hechúra*, They made me pay halfe a crowne for the fashion or making: *La cosa no lleua remédio*, The matter is past remedie: *El me lleua tres años*, He passeth me three yeares, that is to say, He is three yeares older then I.

*Cesar Oudin* hath here spoken concerning the difference betwixt *Nadie* and *ningúno*, for that in the French tongue they both may be interpreted after one manner, which might cause the Learner to vsó sometimes the one for the other; but because it is otherwise in English, I haue not thought it conuenient to translate it: for *nadie* signifieth, No body, being applied to persons, and *ningúno* is an Adiectiue that may be ioyned to any Substantiue.

Of the Verbe *Parár*.

*Parár*, doth properly signifie, to stop, or stay, but is vsed diuersly: as, *Parár miéntes*, To marke or take heed of. *Tu que miéntes*, lo que dizes para miéntes: Thou that liest, beware what thou sayest: *En que paró el negócio?* What came the businesse to? *Mira y verás que tal pararán*, Behold and thou shalt see in what order they will place, how they will trim: *Déxame entre las mános aquél asnejonázo, y verás qual te lo páro*, Leaué me that blockhead in my hands,

hands, and thou shalt see how I will trim him. It also signifieth, to become: as, *Paró se bueno*, He became good. *Canállo de buena para*, A horse of a good stop. *Paráda* signifieth also a standing to shoot at Deere in.

### Of the Verbe *Passár*.

There is no difficulty in this Verbe as touching his proper signification, onely I haue obserued the Spaniards doe vse it in certaine phrases which they haue, as, *Passár por la imaginación*, or *por el pensamién-to*, To come vnto ones minde: *Núnca tal cósa me passó por la imaginación*, I neuer thought vpon any such matter. They say *Passár de cláro en cláro*, to signifie, From one side to the other. I haue read in Montemayor, *passó solía*, which is a manner of speaking when they call to minde that which hath beene, and is no more, as of the good time which they haue seene, of the pleasures and pastimes of their youth past. They vse this kinde of speaking, *Passár la mano por el cerro*, signifying, to flatter or make much of, as they doe to a horse, in stroaking him vpon the backe.

### Of the Verbe *Pedir*.

I haue not obserued any difficulty in the Verbe *pedir*, vnlesse in this manner of speaking, *Pedir célos*, which should signifie word by word, To demand ieaousies, but the meaning of it is, To giue the party beloued to vnderstand that they are ieaous of them. See Montemayor. *Y cuántas vézes llorando, ay lágrimas engañosas, pedía célos de cósas, de que yo estaba burlando*. And how often weeping, O deceitfull

full teares, did he alleage me occasions of ieaousie, vpon things whereof I made a mockery.

I was not willing to passe ouer with silence the difference betwixt *pedir* and *preguntár*, for that in English they both doe signifie, to aske, or to demand. It behoueth to know that *pedir*, is to aske for to haue, and *preguntár*, to demand or aske for to know. Those that vnderstand Latine will haue no vse of this explication: For they may presently iudge that *pedir* signifieth *petere*, and *preguntár* *precunctári*, which is as much as to say *interrogare*.

### Of the Verbe *Picárse*.

*Picárse*, is taken by the Spaniards in a signification very different from that which the simple Verbe *picár* doth denote: for it is properly vnderstood, to make a profession of some thing: as, *Pícase de valiente*, He maketh a profession of being valiant: *Pícase de galáno*, *pícase de músico*, *pícase de letrado*, *pícase de cortesano*, and other the like. And the very same may be said with the Verbe *preciárse*, as, *Précíase de valiente*, *de músico*, &c. They sometimes moreouer say, *Tiene puntas*, as, *Tiene puntas de letrado*, He maketh a profession of being learned.

### *Quebrár*.

*Quebrár el enójo*, To discharge his choller: *quebrár* signifieth properly, to breake. *Quebrár el ójo al diábulo*, To venture vpon somewhat, supposing that being once done, it will euer after be easie. *Quebrár vn ójo*, To put out an eye.

OF

Of *recaudar* and *recáudo*.

*Recaudar*, hath the signification of *cobrar*, which is, to recouer; as, *Recaudar rentas*, To recouer and receiue rents. *Ceiest. No hize sino llegar y recaudar*, I did but arriue and recouer, or get immediatly that which I demanded. *Recáudo*, which of most Spaniards is pronounced *recádo*, doth extend it selfe much farther then the Verbe in diuersitie of significations; for sometimes it signifieth that which the Italian calleth *recapito*, and may be Englished dexteritie; sometimes it is taken for prouision: as, *à buen recáudo vengo*, I come not vnprovidid. Likewise, *Poner recáudo*, To haue care or diligence: It signifieth moreouer a message, and a present which is sent from one to another, and in generall when they will briefly signifie all that is belonging to any thing, they vse this word *recádo*, which in this sense may be construed, wherewith: as if being about to write, they should aske for pen, inke, and paper, this might well bee said, *Da me recádo para escriuir*, Giue me wherewith to write. So likewise, *Dad nos recádo para almorzar*, Giue vs wherewith to breake our fast.

Of *Reboluér*.

*Reboluér*, compounded of *boluér*, signifieth to trouble, to remoue, and to turne vpside downe, from whence commeth *rebuélta*, a tumult: *rebuélta*, the participle, is said of a woman which is but newly risen, which is with her haire about her eares, and which is not as yet made ready. They also say, *Reboluér se con una mugér*, To meddle or make with a woman.

Of

Of *Ser*.

The Spaniards vse diuersly this Verbe *ser*, and sometimes differently frō that it signifieth in English, as, *Que? todo ha de ser ingár?* What? will they doe nothing but play? *Todo ha de ser passár?* Will they walke for euer? *Si que no ha de ser todo andarse à la flor del bérro*; It is well knowne that all ought not to goe gather the flower of Water-crelles: this is a manner of speaking which is said to slothfull people, and such as will doe nothing. *Si Dios fuere seruido*, If it please God. *Si v.m. fuere seruido*, If it please you. In his proper signification they say: *Es un perdido, un necio, un vellaco, un bôuo, un haragán, un fulléro*; He is a lewd creature, a foole, a knaue, a blockhead, a lubber, a cosener. To describe a theefe they say, *Es un gâto, es de tierra de Asia, tiene vñas*; He is a Cat, he is of the countrey of Asia, he hath nailes, or clawes: vpon this word of *Asia*, the allusion is very pretty, for *asir*, signifieth to catch and take hold off. To decipher a man that is subtrill, they doe vse these manners of speaking: *Es un móno, es un zorro, es un perro viejo, es un bividór*: He is a monkey, he is a fox, he is an old dogge, he is a craftie headed fellow. *Miranda adioyneth these formes ensuing; Bien sabe quantos son cinco, llega os à el que se le cae la càpa, no le echaréis dâdo falso, ni que bôuo es el môço. Pués ten le el pie al herrár, metêde el dâdo en la bôca*; all which are manners of speaking proper to the Spaniards, being applied in the same sense that the former. They doe also vse this Verbe in comparisons without the Adiectiue: as, *Es un Cesar, es una gallina, es como un ôro, es como una cera, es como una niêe, es como una pez*. He is a Cesar, he is a hen, It



It looketh like gold, It is as yellow as wax, It is as white as snow, It is as blacke as pitch. *Esso es miel y manteca y pan pintado*, That is as sweet as honny and butter, and sugar cakes, or figured bread. *Ser parte*, to be sufficient, *Esso no fué parte para que yo lo hiziesse*, That was not sufficient to cause me to doe it. *To no soy parte para ello*, I am not sufficient for that.

### Of the Verbe *Traer*.

*Traer*, which is, as I haue already said, opposite to *lleuar*. besides that it signifieth, to bring, and to leade, is sometimes taken, to put in vse, or to practise, as, *Traer entre las manos*, To vse, or put in practise. *Celest.* where *Centurio* speaketh of the diuers manners of slaying, he saith, *Las que yo uso y traygo entre las manos, son espaldarazos, sin sangre*, Those which I vse, and chiefly doe put in practise, are blowes giuen with the sword flat-wise vpon the shoulders, without fetching the bloud. *Traer en lenguas*, To tell from one to another: *Mira no seas traydo en lenguas*, Looke that thou bee not the fable of the people, that they make not their tales of thee.

### Of *Tomar*.

*Tamartino*, or *tiénto*, To iudge, or giue iudgement. *Tomar la boz a alguno*, signifieth to heare newes of his enemy; as, *Tomóle la boz que el Emperador, estava muy cerca con su exercito*, Hee had newes that the Emperour was very neere with his Armie. *Celest.* *Porque adonde me tomare la boz me halle apercebida*, To the end that where I shall haue newes of my enemy, I finde my selfe in readinesse to fight.

fight. *Esta cosa es de tomo*, This matter is of importance. *Tomar* signifieth properly, to take.

### Of *Votar* and *Voto*.

*Votar*, signifieth to say ones minde or opinion, and *voto*, is the said opinion, in this signification. *Votar* is also construed, to vow, or make a vow and promise to God, and *voto* Noun, shall be the same vow. The Spaniards vse this last signification in their oathes: as, *Voto a Dios*, I make a promise to God; they say moreouer, *juro a Dios*: But those that haue lesse impiety, will say, *voto a diez*, which shall be vnderstood *a diez diablos*.

### Of the Accent that ought to be made in the Spanish Pronunciation.

To auoid all tediousnesse and prolixitie, it beho- ueth to make a diuision of the words ending in vowels and consonants, which is partly already shewed at the beginning of this Grammar.

Now it is requisite to know that if the word doe end in a consonant, which cannot be but in one of these six, *d, l, n, r, x, z*, (to the which may be adioyned *s*, when it is found in the singular) and that it be of one only syllable, it shall not bee needfull to giue any rule thereof, for that the accent cannot bee but vpon the same. But if it be compounded of many syllables, the accent shall be made vpon the last: as, *Lealdad, humanidad, ciudad: merced, pared: valla- dolid, madrid: virtud, senectud*: to which may bee annexed the second person plurall of the Imperative of euery coniugation, which euermore end in *ad*, in *ed*, or in *id*: as, *amad, andad: hazed, comed: venid, dezid*: and moreouer all those that doe end in *d*.



In *l*, as, *General*, *animal*, *señal* : *miel*, *hiel*, *batel* : *abril*, *brasíl*, *candíl* : *caracól*, *Españól*, *arreból*, *azúl*.

These following are excepted, *árbol*, *mármol*, *cónsul*, *hábil*, *débil*, *fértil*, *frágil*, *móbil*, *ángel*, *cárcel*, *apóstol*, *Cristóval*, *fácil*, *diffícil*, *dócil*, *ésteril*, *útil*, *estiercol*, *tréból* : the which are pronounced with the accent vpon the penultima, as you see them marked : and in the plurall number it behoueth to put the said accent on the same syllable or vowell, as in the singular : as, *General*, *generáles* : *animal*, *animáles* : *batel*, *batéles* : *árbol*, *árboles* : *cónsul*, *cónsules* : *hábil*, *hábiles* : &c.

In *n*, as, *Capitán*, *faysán*, *Iuán* : *almazén*, *rehén* : *mastín*, *hollín*, *orín* : *mesón*, *coraçón*, *currón* : *atún*, *sagún*.

I haue found some excepted : as are, *Cármén*, *crímen*, *ymágen*, *márgen*, *órden*, *orígen*, *vírgen*, *exámen*, *númen*, *volúmen*, *bitúmen*, *Estéuan* : all which are knowne to haue the accent in the plurall number, vpon the Antepenultima : as, *órdenes*, and not *ordenes*, which should be a tense Subiunctiue of the Verbe *ordenár*.

In *r*, as *Albeitár*, *açucár*, *acibár*, *albañár*, *muladár* ; and proper names of men, as, *Gaspár*, *Baltazár* ; likewise all the infinitiues of Verbes, as, *Amár*, *hablár*, *hazér*, *boluér*, *dezír*, *morír*, &c. *Mugér*, *plazér*, *añír*, *albañír*.

These following are excepted, *Alcáçar*, *ámbar*, *án-sar*, *açófar*, *tíbar*, *cáncer*, *carácter*.

In *o*, as *Amadór*, *hazedór*, *labradór*, *oradór*, *pecadór*, and infinite more.

In *x*, as, *Carcáx*, *almofréx*, *relóx*, *amoradúx*, and some few others.

In *z*, as *Capáz*, *rapáz*, *sagáz* : *arredréz*, *jaéz*, *vejéz* ; *perdíx* *naríz* ; *aróz*, *albornóz* ; *capúz*, *orofúz*.

From

From these are excepted certaine Nounes, or rather Surnames of families, which doe end in *az*, and in *ez*, as : *Díaz*, *Aluarez*, *Núñez*, *Pérez*, *Suárez*, *Gómez*, *Sánchez*, *Martínez*, *Rodríguez*, *Benítez*, *Sáyaz*, *Láynez* ; all which haue the accent vpon the penultima or antepenultima.

Of the words that end in *s*, I haue not found any of the parts declinable, hauing the accent vpon the finall, sauing *Diós*, which is as it were a monosyllable, and *anis*.

Of the indeclinable there be many that haue the accent vpon the penultima, as *antes*, *de brúces*, *agátas*, *agatillas*, *a sabiéndas*, *Léxos*, *entónçes*. Some also put it vpon the last, as, *atranés*, *al renés*, *después*, *jamás*, and others the like.

As touching the words that end in vowels, they haue the accent very vncertaine, and it will be difficult to giue any perfect rule thereof ; yet neuertheless it is behouefull to speake so farre as we shall be able.

It is first requisite to note, that if the word consist but of two syllables, the accent shall be made vpon the first, and for those of three or more, some will haue it on the penultima, others vpon the antepenult, and of this last ranke shall be those that haue the letter *i*, or *y*, in the penultima, before the consonants, *c*, *t*, *l*, *m* : as, *Músico*, *síndico*, *físico*, *flemático*, *colérico*, *exército*, *hábito*, *azéyte*, *deléyte*, *aséyte*, *báyle*, *fráyle*, *paráyle*, *boníssimo*, *malíssimo*, and in summe, all the Superlatiues that end in *ssimo*.

Nounes Diminutiues ending in *ico*, and *ito*, are excepted from this rule, hauing the accent vpon the penultima, as, *bonico*, *chiquito*, and so generally all other Diminutiues of whatsoever terminations they be,

be, as, *asnillo, cestillo, moquelo, borrochuelo*, and likewise those which are of the Feminine Gender.

Of the Nounes ending in *ia*, some are accented vpon the *i*, which maketh the penultime syllable, as, *Alegria, cuardía, filosofía, fantasía, policía, alcan- zia, porfia, señoría, sangría, valentía*, and others which are either direct Spanish, or else Greeke, for those that be rather Latine, doe put the said accent vpon the antepenultima, which may be seene in these following; *auséncia, blasfémia, deméncia, de- lência, escória, eficácia, glória, indústria, infámia, in- júria*: *Lazéria* is of those, notwithstanding it be not Latine. *Académia* is so likewise, *miséria, mem- ria, rábia*, and many such others.

There are a great number ending in *a*, with an indifferent consonant, which haue also the accent indifferently, for some haue it on the penultima, and others on the antepenultima: of the penulti- ma, or last syllable saue one, I haue found, *Alcanála, sepultúra, locúra, cordúra, disputa*: and of the ante- penult, I haue obserued, *Alcándara, alhóndiga, pér- dida* Nounes, to distinguish it from the Feminine Participle *perdida*, which followeth the rule of the Masculine *perdido*, hauing the accent on the Penul- tima, as also all other Participles haue it.

These Aduerbes *acá, allá, acullá*, are accented vpon the finall *a*, as you see them noted: so this o- ther *quicá*, and semblably those which doe end in *i*, as, *ay, allí, aquí*, with their Compounds. *Marané- di, and çaquicami* Nounes, doe follow the same rule.

As touching Nounes ending in *io*, I haue found as much difficultie, as in others, for some haue the accent on the *i*, as, *Aluedrío, desafío, desuário, hastío, Indio*,

*Indio, nauío, poderío, rocío, Señorío, sombrío, vazío*, and some others which the diligent shall be able to note.

Others accent the antepenultima, as, *adultério, agráo, almário, aduersário, boticário, bárrio, contrá- rio, pátio, preço, menosprecio, palácio*.

There be found some ending in *o*, as much differ- ring as those in *a*, as, *Tabernáculo, báculo, Ostáculo, bigado*, which haue the accent on the antepenult; and others haue it on the penultima, as, *Tauernéro, hornéro, harnéro*, which with very little iudgement may be discerned.

### *Accent of Verbes.*

We haue already said, that all Infinitives of Verbes haue the accent vpon the last syllable, as, *amár, hablár, poder, dezír, morir*, &c.

The first and third person singular of the Preter- perfect of the Indicatiue, haue their accent vpon the last syllable, as, *To amé, aquel amó; yo perdí, el per- dió, yo escriuí, aquel escriuió*.

Some are excepted, which haue the penultima long, as are, *húue, húuo*, of *hauer*: *hize, hizo*, of *hazer*: *andúue, andúuo*, of *andar*: *púde, pudo*, of *poder*: *púse, puso*, of *poner*: *dixe, dixo*, of *dezir*: *túue, túuo*, of *tener*: *estúue, estúuo*, of *estar*: *trúxe, truxo*, of *traer*: *súpe, supo*, of *saber*: *víue, vino*, of *venir*: *cúpe, cupo*, of *caber*: *quise, quiso*, of *querer*.

In the Future of the Indicatiue, the three Persons Singular, and the third Plurall, haue their accent on the finall syllable, as, *Amaré, amarás, amará, ama- rán*: *haré, harás, hará, harán*: *diré, dirás, dirá, di- rán*, &c. And as for the first and second Person plu- rall, they shall haue it on the Penultima, as,

*amarémos,*

*amarémos, amaréys : harémos, haréis, dirémos, diréys, &c.*

The second Person Plurall of the Imperatiue which endeth alwaies in *d*, hath his accent (as is already said) vpon the last syllable, as, *amád, hazéd, coméd, veríd, &c.* But it is to be noted, that Spaniards doe ordinarily in speaking omit the sound of the said *d*, leauing notwithstanding the accent vpon the Vowell, that precedeth it, as, *amá, hazé, comé, dezi, &c.* Except *oyd*, which neuer loseth the *d*.

The Imperfect of the Indicatiue, Optatiue, and Subiunctiue, and the Pluperfect of the two last, as also the Future of the Subiunctiue, in the singular number, haue euermore the accent on the Penultima, in all the three Persons, and in the Plurall, the first and second still haue it on the Antepenultima: as for the Indicatiue, *Amáua, amáuas, amáuua, amáuamos, amáuades, amáuuan.* For the Optatiue and Subiunctiue, *amásse, amásses, amásse, amássemos, amássedes, amássen.* Likewise, *amára, amáras, amára, amáramos, amárades, amáran.* For the Future, *amáre, amáres, amáre, amáremos, amáredes, amáren.* This second person plurall of the Future is abridged very often by Syncope, as for *amáredes*, it is written *amárdes*, retaining neuerthelesse his accent vpon the second syllable. Finally it may be easily knowne, that there where the accent is put in the singular, it is found in the plurall, that is to say, vpon the same vowell, whether there be an addition of a syllable or no.

It is yet behouefull to say for a conclusion, that there are certaine Nounes & Verbes which haue great affinitie in writing, and notwithstanding are different

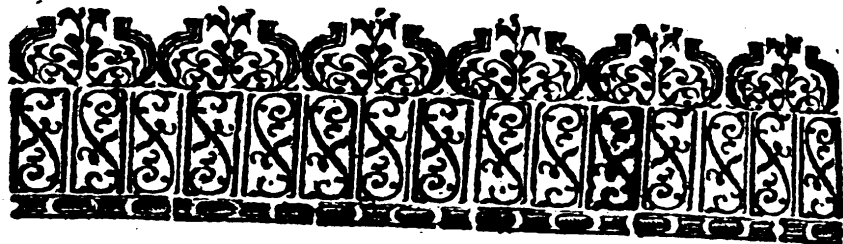
rent in pronounciation, as *Magnífico, magnífica, magníficos, magníficas*, which being Nounes, doe require their accent vpon the Antepenult. But *Magnífico, magníficas, magnífica*, Verbe, hath the said accent on the Penultima, and the same shall be found of many others that haue this affinitie.

In conclusion, behold that which time hath permitted me to collect, beseeching the Readers, friendly to aduertise me of the faults that they shall finde in this little Collection, and to accept of the good will which I haue had, and shall euer haue to doe better.

Farewell.

FINIS.

P 4



# DIALOGOS FAMILIARES en lengua Española.

Por I. de LUNA, Castellano.

## DIALOGO PRIMERO, ENTRE VN MAESTRO, y un Discipulo.

*Discipulo.*

**B** Es o las mãos de vueſa merced.

*Maestro.*

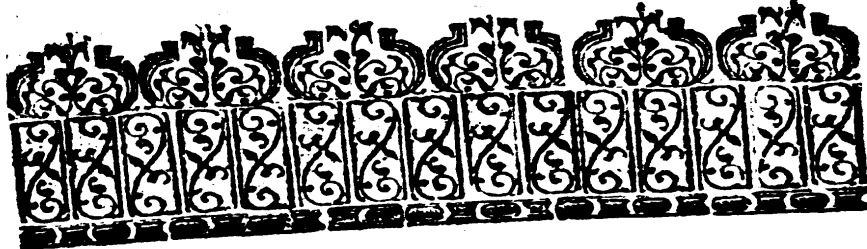
Yo las de vueſa merced: Que es éſto que ſiémpre viéne tarde?

*D.* La ocaſión Señor ha ſido, ciérta ocupación preciſa que he tenido.

*M.* Al mal pagador núnca le faltan excuſas, ſábe vueſa merced la lición de ayér?

*D.* Si Señor; ſólo querria ſuplicár à vueſa merced, me dixéſſe el módo que ſe tiéne en Eſpaña en ſaludár, y las palábras de cumplimíento mas ordinárias.

*M.* No ſe puede dar vna réglá tan general, que ſirua para tódas las Prouíncias, hauiéndo en cáda vna ſu particular úſo, però en todas éllas ſe tiéne por bueno,



# FAMILIAR DIALOGUES in Spanish.

By I. de Luna, Caſt.

## THE FIRST DIALOGUE, BETWEENE THE MASTER and the Schollar.

*Schollar.*

**S** I R, I kiſſe your hands.

*Master.*

And I yours. How is it that you ſtill come late?

*S.* A certaine vrgent affaire, Sir, hath beene the occaſion that hath detained me.

*M.* An ill paymaſter neuer wants excuſes; are you perfect in your yesterdaies leſſon?

*S.* Yea Sir, but I would only beſeech you to relate unto me the manner of ſaluting uſed in Spaine, and ſuch complementall words as are moſt commonly ſpoken.

*M.* There can no rule be giuen ſo generall, that may ſerue for all Prouinces, euery one hauing its particular uſe; yet that of the Court is held for good, and approved

buéno, y acertádo el de la corte, el qual es cómo se sigue. Quando vno va a visitár à otro que sea su igual (que es de lo que tratámos) acercádo se adónde está el a quien va à visitár, le dize. Beso las mãos de vueña merced; el visitádo responde, yo las de vuestra merced: el que visita pregunta, como está vuestra merced? El otro responde, a seruicio de vuestra merced, y vuestra merced como está? El que visita responde, a seruicio de vuestra merced, de qualquier suerte que estuviere. El que es visitádo dize al otro, suplico à vuestra merced, se sirua de tomár vna sílla. Conuiéne notár, que el mejor lugar para sentárse, es el mas junto del estrádo, que es vn lugar en que las dâmas se siéntan, leuantádo de tierra vn palmo, cubiérto de alhómbros, y lléno de almohádas. En Francia ponen en lugar de estrádo vna camilla verde. El mas honrrádo lugar de la mesa es la cabecera. El segundo después de éste, es el de la mano derecha del que está a la caucera. El tercero, el de la mano izquierda, y así por órden, vno a la mano derecha, y otro a la izquierda.

D. Y quando dos salen de casa, que lugar se hade dár al que queremos honrrár?

M. Siémpre lo hémos de lleuár a la mano derecha, sin mudár, y si son tres, el mas digno se pone en medio, el segundo à su mano derecha, y el tercero a la izquierda.

D. He oydo dezir que los Españóles son muy descorτές, y que desmienten a vn hombre (como quien no dize nada) sin pedir perdón, como hazen los Francéses quando contradizen à algúno.

M. Verdád es que quando en España pregunta vno a otro si ha hecho ésto, o aquéllo, y le hazen cargo de algúna cosa, el otro responde libremente si, o no,

used in all of them; which is as followeth. When any one goeth to visit another his equall (for thereof we speake) approaching neere unto the place where he is, hee saith unto him. I kisse your hands Sir; the party visited answereth, and I yours; he that visiteth demandeth, how doe you Sir? the other answereth, at your seruice Sir, and you Sir, how are you? The party visiting replieth, at your seruice in what estate soener. He that is visited, saith unto the other, I beseech you Sir be pleased to take a chaire. It is requisite to note that the chiefeest place for sitting is the nearest to the cloth of state, which is where the Ladies and Gentlewomen doe sit, being raysed a handfull from the ground, couered with Turkey carpets, and full of pillowes. In France they set a greene couch, in place of the cloth of state. The principall place at the table is the upper end. The next after this is that on the right hand of him that so sitteth at the end. The third that on the left hand, and so in order, one on the right hand and another on the left.

S. And when two goe forth together, what place must be giuen to him whom we will respect?

M. We must alwaies put him on the right hand, not changing at all: And if there be three, the worthiest must be placed in the middle, the second on the right hand, and the third on the left.

S. I haue heard reported that Spaniards are very discourteous, and that they giue a man the lye (as if they said a matter of nothing) without asking pardon, as Frenchmen doe when they contradict one.

M. True it is that when in Spaine one demandeth of another if he haue done this, or that, and lay somewhat unto his charge, the other freely answereth yea, or no,

no, sin pedir perdon. Si el que afirma algo es persona de calidad dicen. Segun mi parecer, a lo que creo, o como dicen, así es, o no es, por no contradecir claramente, y así no es descortesia, antes lo sería si claramente no respondiessen a la pregunta.

D. No me parece mal, pues como dicen en cada villa su marauilla, y en cada tierra su uso: mas el que los Españoles tienen de no acompañar a quien los va a visitar hasta la puerta, de la calle, no me agrada.

M. Respondiendo a lo que a vuesa merced le parece descortesia en los Españoles, digo que la costumbre es de no porfiar mucho, y así dicen, *mas vale ser nécio que porfiado*. Quando vn Francés va a visitar a vn Español, y siguiendo el uso de Francia porfia demasiado, el Español guardando el de España, lo dexa muchas vezes en la puerta del aposento: pero quando los Españoles se visitan unos a otros, saben bien el uso, y costumbre, y así se dexan acompañar hasta la puerta de la calle, de donde se sigue, que no es descortesia la que los Españoles usan con los Francés, mas ignorancia, del modo de Francia, que es de porfiar tanto, que cansan, y se cansan.

D. Querría saber si es verdad, lo que me han dicho, que las mugeres no acompañan a los hombres que las van a visitar.

M. Verdad es que no hazen, sino leuantarse en pie si están sentadas, y hazerles vna reuerencia, dexando los yr solos, sino tienen algún criado que los acompañe.

D. Y las mugeres, con las mugeres?

M. Hazen

no, without any asking of pardon. If he that affirmeth somewhat be a person of account, they say, As it seemeth to me, as I beleene, or as they say, it is, or it is not so, to auoid a direct contradiction; and therefore it is no discourtesie, but would rather be so, if directly they should not answer to the demand or question.

S. I doe not mislike it, seeing as they say, In euery towne his wonder, and in euery Countie his custome: but that which the Spaniards use of not accompanying to the street doore or gate, such as doe goe to visit them, doth in no wise please me.

M. Answering to that which seemeth vnto you, a discourtesie in Spaniards, I reply, that they are not accustomed to contend much, and therefore they say, Tis better to be unciuill then contentious. When a French man goeth to visit a Spaniard, and following the custome of France, doth ouer-much contend, the Spaniard obseruing that of Spaine, leaueth him oftentimes at his Chamber doore: But when Spaniards doe visit one another, they know the use and custome, and so permit themselues to be accompanied to the street doore or gate; whereupon it followeth, that it is no want of courtesie that which the Spaniards use vnto French men, but ignorance of the fashion of France, which is to contend so much, that they both wearie others, and are wearied themselues.

S. I would gladly know, whether it be true as I haue heard, that the women doe not conduct forth the men that goe to visit them.

M. It is true that they doe not, but only rise vp from their seats, and make them a reuerence, leauing them to themselues, unlesse they haue some seruant to accompany them.

S. And the women, with the women?

M. Like

*M.* Házen como los hombres con los hombres.

*D.* Tienen los Españóles alguna cerimonia diferente de los Francéses quando comen?

*M.* La differéncia que áy, es que los Españóles antes de comer muy pocas vezes se laban las manos, que es vna porquería de mas de marca.

*D.* Y que escusa se da a esso?

*M.* Aunque no es muy buena se puede admitir, y es que no tocan nada que no háyan de comer.

*D.* Tan poco los Francéses en las mesas de calidad.

*M.* Con todo esso áy mucha diferencia, porque los Españóles no ponen sino vn plato descubierito, del qual dan a cada vno vn poco en vn platillo, y quando el que parte vee que acában lo que les han dado, toma otros platillos, y da a cada vno su parte, y lo mesmo háze de todos los otros platos, y ésta es la escusa que se puede dar al no labárse las manos.

*D.* No es bastante, porque el que parte toca lo que los otros han de comer.

*M.* Verdad es, pero con vn tenedor.

*D.* Quién repárte?

*M.* En la mesa de los grandes, el Maéstre-sala, en las otras la áma de casa, o el que se comide à ello.

*D.* Bríndan en España?

*M.* No lo házen, sino quando comen con los estrangéros.

*D.* Dízen que los mas honrrados se leuántan los priméros de la mesa.

*M.* No se leuantan los primeros, pero nenguno lo háze hasta que el mas digno, o mas anciáno se quiere leuantar.

*D.* Y

*M.* Like as the men with the men.

*S.* Use the Spaniards any different ceremonie from the Frenchmen when they eat?

*M.* The difference is, that they seldome times wash their hands before meat, which is, as great a filthinesse as may be.

*S.* And what excuse giue they for it?

*M.* Although no very good one, yet it may be admitted, and it is, that they touch nothing which they are to eat.

*S.* Neither doe French-men at mens tables of account.

*M.* Notwithstanding there is much difference, for Spaniards haue but one dish vnconuered vpon the table, whereof they giue part to euery one vpon a little plate, and when he that carueth, perceiueth them to haue eaten it, he taketh new plates, and giueth to euery man his part, doing in the like manner by the rest of the dishes, and this is the excuse that may be giuen for not washing their hands.

*S.* It is not sufficient, for he that diuideth toucheth that which the rest are to eat.

*M.* It is so, but with a little Forke.

*S.* Who is it that distributeth?

*M.* At great mens tables, the Caruer, at others the Mistresse of the house, or some one that sheweth himselfe officious therein.

*S.* Doe they drinke to one another in Spaine?

*M.* They doe not use it, vnlesse when they dine with strangers.

*S.* They say that the greater persons rise first from the table.

*M.* They doe not rise the first, but none doth it till the most worthy, or ancientest person be pleased to rise.

*S.* And



D. Y si vno tiéne necesidad, o gana de hazér lo, ha de aguardár a la sorna de vn viejo cadúco, que si comiénça, a contár algo, es mas largo que Mayo, y ma emfadoso que enamorado pobre?

M. Diziéndo con licencia de vuestra merced, se puede leuantár.

D. Huélgo me de saber lo que vuestra merced me ha dicho, aunque créo no hauérlo menester, porque no pienso yr a España en mi vida, mas por lo que puede sucedér, es bueno saber de todo. Quando vno se despide de otro, como dize?

M. Con licencia de vuestra merced, que es tarde, el otro respónde (si es su igual) vuestra merced la tiéne para mandárme, y si es superior dize, vuestra merced la tiéne, o váya vuestra merced con diós: el que se va pregunta, que me manda vuestra merced en su seruicio? el otro responde, yo tengo de servir a vuestra merced; vltimamente el que se va dize, beso las manos de vuestra merced, el otro respónde, yo las de vuestra merced.

D. Lo que mas pena me da, es la mudança de títulos que en España acostúmbren a dar, que son casi infinitos.

M. Quién se lo ha dicho, le ha engañado, que aunque áy muchos, no son tantos, que no se puedan contár, y paraque lo éche de ver, los pondré aquí.

D. Reccurriré gran merced en ello.

M. El priméro, y mas vaxo es, *Tu*, que se da a los niños, o a las personas que queremos mostrar grande familiaridad, o amor. Vos, se dize a los criados, o vasállos; *Vuejaste vuestra merced, vuestra merced*, que significan vna mesma cosa, y no se muda segun la calidad de las personas (segun algunos piensan)

S. And if any one haue necessitie or desire to doe it, must he attend the slownesse of an old transitorie fellow, who beginning some tale, is longer then the moneth of May, and more tiresome then a poore louer?

M. Saying, With your fauours leane, he may rise.

S. I am glad that I know this which you haue told me, although I not beleene that I shall haue need of it; for I doe not thinke euer to goe into Spaine; but for that which may happen, it is good to know a little of all. When one taketh his leane of another, how doth he say?

M. With your licence Sir, for it is late; the other answereth (-if he be his equall) you haue it to command me: and if he be Superiour, he saith, you haue it, or God be with you. He that is going asketh, What doe you command me in your seruice? The other answereth, It behoueth me to doe you seruice; Finally, he that goeth saies, I kisse your hands; the other answereth, and I yours.

S. That which doth most of all trouble me, is the varietie of titles, that they are accustomed to giue in Spaine, which be almost infinite.

M. Whosoener hath told you that, hath deceiued you, for although there be many, the number is not so great, but that they may be told; and to the end you may perceiue it, I will here put them downe.

S. You shall doe me a great fauour therein.

M. The first, and meanest is, *Tu*, which is giuen to children, or to such persons whom we will shew great loue and familiaritie: Vos is said to seruants, or subiects. Vueste, vuestra merced, vuestra merced, signifie one thing, and it is not changed according to the qualitie of the Persons (as some thinke) but is chosen.



énfan) pero esta mudança viéne de parte del que habla; que si es de los mas ladinos dize *vuestre*, el común *vuesa merced*, y los mas rúuticos *vuestra merced*; El qual título se da à todos grandes, y pequeños: *vn. Señoría*, a los Cóndes, Marquéses, y Obispos, a los quales se déue de derécho. A los Varónes, Vizcóndes, Abádes de mitra, sus amigos solos les dan el título de *Señoría*. A los Presidentes, y Oydóres, los lláman *Señoría*, solo en sus tribunales. *Vuesa excelencia* a los Dúques, Virréyes, y generáles de armadas. *Vuesa Alteza*, a los hermanos del Réy, o a los Principes souerános. A los Réyes, *vuestra Magestad*, A los Eclesiásticos se dize *vuesa merced*, como al común de los légos. A los fráyles, *vuesa reuerencia*. A los Preládos de vn monasterio *vuesa Paternidad*. A los de vna Prouincia, *vuesa Reverenda Paternidad*. A los generáles de vna Religión, *vuesa Paternidad Reuerendissima*. A los Arçobispos, y Cardinales, *vuesa illustrissima Señoría*. Al Pápa, *vuesa Santidad*.

D. Mejor hazen en Francia, que a todos los igualan diziéndoles *vos*.

M. Essa sola razón muéstra ser malo el uso della, pues iguala al Príncipe con el ganapán, y no haze distinción de personas, siendo justo la háya.

D. V.m. estará enfadado de mis nécias preguntas.

M. No lo puedo estar, no siendo lo ellas, antes la receiré muy grande, que me pregunte todo lo que fuere de su gusto, pues el mio no es, sino de servirle.

D. *Vuesa merced* me obliga siémpre, a que lo haga; vn escrúpulo me quéda.

M. Diga le *vuesa merced*, porque no es bueno andar con la conciencia escrupulosa.

D. Es

chosen and applied according to the language of him that speaketh; for such as be well spoken say *Vuestre*, the common *vuesa merced*, and the rudest sort *vuestra merced*; the which title is giuen to all, be they great or little: *Vu. Señoría*, to Earles, Marquesses, and Bishops, to whom it is due of right. To Barons, Vicounts, and Abbots, their friends only giue them the title of *Señoría*. To Presidents and Counsellors, they attribute *Señoría*, but when they are in their seats. *Vuesa excelencia* is for Dukes, Vice-Royes, and Admirals. *Vuestra alteza*, for the King his brothers, and soueraine Princes. *Vuestra Magestad*, for the King. To Ecclesiasticall persons, they say, *Vuesa merced*, as to the common sort of Lay-men. To the Religious, *Vuesa reuerencia*. To the Superiours of a Monasterie, *Vuesa Paternidad*. To those of a Prouince, *Vuesa Reverenda Paternidad*. To the Generals of an Order, *Vuesa Paternidad Reuerendissima*. To Arch-Bishops, and Cardinals, *Vuesa Illustrissima Señoría*. To the Pope, *Vuesa Santidad*.

S. *Me thinkes they doe better in France, making them all equall by this word vous.*

M. That reason only sheweth their custome to be ill, seeing they equall the Prince with the Porter, and make no distinctions of persons, being fit that there were.

S. You are surely wearied with my foolish questions.

M. That I cannot be, since they are not such; but you rather doe me a great fauour, by asking of me that which answereth to your desire, seeing mine is only to doe you service.

S. You still doe oblige me to render vnto you that service: Now I haue one scruple remaining.

M. Speake it hardly, for it is not good to carrie a scrupulous conscience.

D. Es pués el caso, que no sê la caúsa, porque han tantos Franceses a España, y viénen tan pocos Españóles a Francia, siéndo la Francia mejor tierra, mas rica y fértil que España, ( al parecer de los vnos, y de los ótros. )

M. La ocasión desto es que la Francia no solo es fértil en frutos, y animales irracionáles, pero mucho mas en los racionáles, por ser el temperamento de la tierra mas apto a la generaci3n; y assi áy tantos hombres, que haviéndo poblado su tierra, quéda aun para poblár las otras, y siéndo España vna de las vezinas, le cábe su parte, y mas, por ser menos fecúnda que las otras, que es porque los Españoles no viénen a Francia.

D. Buena es esta raç3n, pero no créo es la principal, porque muchos Españóles van a Italia, Flándes, y a las Indias, sin ser Soldádos, solo por veér la tierra, y viuir en ella, y a Francia no viéne ninguno.

M. La principal piénso es, que los Españoles siéndo como son altiuos, no quíeren yr adonde los menos précian, y adónde no les permiten mandár, como házen en algúnas partes de Italia, Flándes, y las Indias.

D. Suplico à v. m. me perd3ne el trabáxo que le he dádo.

M. Ningúno puéde dar vuestra merced a quien tanto le de sêa seruir como yo.

D. Mandárme puéde vuestra merced, y con su licencia me v3y, antes que éntre la cal3r.

M. Vuestra merced la tiéne para mandárme.

D. Beso las mános de vuestra merced.

M. Yo las de vuestra merced.

*Fin del primer Dialogo.*

DIALOGO

S. The case then is, that I know not the cause wherefore there goe so many French-men to Spaine, and come so few Spaniards into France, being a better countrie, richer, and more fertile then Spaine, according to the opinion of all men.

M. The occasion hereof is, that France not only is fertile in fruits, and living creatures irrationall, but much more in rationally, for that the temperature of the countrey is more apt to generation; and so there bee so many men, that hauing peopled their owne, there yet remaineth wherewith to make populous other countries: and Spaine being a neighbouring one, receiveth her part and more, by reason it is lesse fruitfull then others, which is the cause why the Spaniards come not into France.

S. That is a good reason, but I cannot thinke it is the principall, for that many Spaniards goe into Italie, Flanders, and to the Indies, without being Souldiers, only to see the country and live therein, and to France there cometh not one.

M. The chiefe reason I beleue is, that the Spaniards being as they are high-minded, will not goe where they least esteeme of them, and where they not permit them to command, as they doe in some parts of Italie, Flanders, and the Indies.

S. I beseech you pardon me the paines that I haue put you to.

M. You cannot put him to any that so much desireth to doe you service as I.

S. You may comma nd me, and with your leave I goe, before the heat comes in.

M. You haue it to command me.

S. Sir I kisse your hands.

M. And I yours Sir.

An end of the first Dialogue.

Q 3

THE



**DIALOGO SEGVNDO**  
**ENTRE VNA DAMA**  
**Y VN GALAN.**

*Galan.*  
**N**O puedo dexár de tener óy muy buen día,  
 pues también lo he commençado.

*Dama.*  
 Que ha hécho ésta mañana, que tanto se promete  
 al fin del día?

*G.* Veér el sol que aóra me alúmbra.

*D.* Según esto todos tendremos buen día, pues  
 a todos nos alúmbra, y le veémos todos.

*G.* Aunque es verdad, que muchos véen el Sol  
 que yo véo, y que ninguno lo puede veér sin que-  
 dár deslumbrádo, pero no todos conócen su virtud,  
 y valór como yo.

*D.* La causa será que v. m. es gran Filósofo.

*G.* Aloménos que sóy mas enamorado que to-  
 dos.

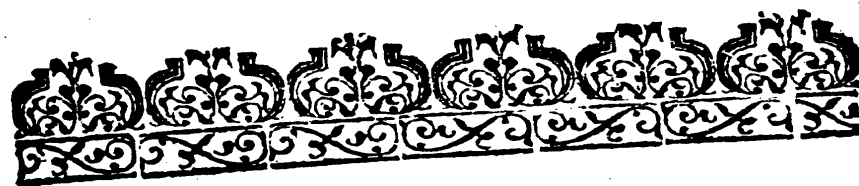
*D.* De quien?

*G.* De quien lo meréce.

*D.* Y quien es la que tanto meréce?

*G.* La que es digna de ser amada, seruida, y ado-  
 rada de todos.

*D.* No áy valór, hermosúra, donáyre y gracia,  
 que



**THE SECOND**  
**DIALOGVE, BETWEENE**  
 a Lady, and a Gallant.

*Gallant.*  
**I** cannot chuse but haue a good day of this, since  
 I haue so well begun it.

*Lady.*  
 What haue you done this morning, that you are so  
 confident in the rest of the day?

*G.* I haue seene the Sunne which now illumines me.

*L.* According unto that, we all shall haue the like,  
 seeing it doth lighten vs all, and all of vs behold it.

*G.* Although the truth is, that many doe see the  
 selfe-same Sunne which I doe, and that none can behold  
 it without remaining dazled, yet all know not the ver-  
 tue and worth of it as I doe.

*L.* Certainly the reason is, that you are a great  
 Philosopher.

*G.* At least-wise that I am the most enamoured of  
 all men.

*L.* Of whom?

*G.* Of her that deserueth it.

*L.* And who is she that so much deserueth?

*G.* One that is worthy to be loued, serued, and ado-  
 red of euery man.

*L.* There is no worth, beautie, comelinesse, and  
 grace,

que vista de cerca no descúbra alguna imperfección, por la qual se haga indigna de lo que parecía ser digna vista de léxos; y así créo que vió de apárte à ella dama, de quien tanto encarece el merecimiento, si ya no es que la vió de nóche, o con antójos.

G. No cáben en el amor tan sincero, firme, y constante, con que la amo, quiero, y reuerencio, ni ménos fué de noche, no la haviendo en su presencia: ni fué de léxos, pues no lo está, ni puede estarlo de mi alma.

D. Del dicho al hecho ay gran trécho, y si en v.m. no es assi, por dichosa se puede tener essa dama, que mereció ser la súya: pero diga me así Diós le guarde, quiénes? conózco la yo?

G. Como a si própria.

D. Como se lláma?

G. Súma de perfección.

D. Ahora la conozco menos. Que señas tiene?

G. Es alta como vn pino, blanca como la niéue, colorádo como vna rósa, y los miémbros de su cuerpo tan bien proporcionádos, que ni el pincél pudo, ny pintór jamás supo hazer cosa que en algo le igualasse, ni a las mas mínimas de sus perfecciones llegasse.

D. No es malo el encarecimiento.

G. No lo es, porque léngua humana no lo podrá dignamente hazer. Quien podrá encarecer, y loár su frente espejada, lísa, y áncha? sus ojos grandes, negros y rasgádos, con dos arcos celestiales, que parecen dos soles puéstos debaxo de arcos triumphales? Que diré de la boca pequeña, y almibarada, lléna de Orientales perlas, que con los rubies de sus diuinos lábios, hazen vna mas que admirable harmonía, y labór?

grace, which seene neere hand, doth not discover some imperfection, by which it is iudged unworthy of what it seemed before to merit, being beheld a far off; and so I imagine you saw that Lady a good distance from you, whose merits you extoll so much, or else by night, or only by fantasie and desire.

G. There was neuer loue so sincere, firme, and constant, as that wherewith I loue, desire, and reuerence her, neither was it by night, not hauing her in your presence, nor yet a farre off, seeing that she not is nor can be so from my soule.

L. Saying and doing are two different things, and if it be otherwise in you, that Lady may be accounted happie, who deserved to be your mistresse: but tell me for Gods sake, who is it? doe you know her?

G. Euen as your selfe.

L. How is she cald?

G. The summe of perfection.

L. Now I know her worse then before. What signes hath she?

L. She is high as a Pine, white as the snow, red as a rose, and all the members of her body so well proportioned, that neither pencill could, nor Painter euer knew how to make a thing, that might any waies equalize her, or correspond with the least of her perfections.

L. This is no illexaggeration.

G. It is not as you terme it, for no humane tongue is able worthily to doe it. Who shall be able to magnifie and praise her bright, smooth, and large forehead? her full, and blacke eies, with two celestiaall circles, seeming two Suns plac'd vnder triumphant Arches? what shall I say of her little, and sugered mouth, which with the Rubies of her diuine lips, make a more then admirable worke, and harmonic? The delicate superficies

labór ? La tez delicáda de su angélico rostro, nádie la puéde mirár, sin quedár deslumbrádo ; sus cauéllos son otros tantos ráyos del Sol, que alumbran, y auiéntan las tiniéblas de mi alma.

D. V. m. ha soñádo en algúna Nympha del Tájo.

G. No es Nympha soñáda, mas la que déxa atrás à Venus, y háze ventája a Diana : es finalmente el alma del álma, vida que me la da, fin y paradéro de todas mis esperánças, y desléos : sus mános largas, blancas, y hermósas, para mi se muéstran cortas, y encogidas.

D. Descríela, que segun lléua la taréa no acabará oy de dezír alabánças de su dama ; y dize las de tan buen donáire, que no me cánso en escuchárlas, pero acábe si quière de dezír me quien es, y adonde viue.

G. Viue en mi alma, y es la que en mi púso la S. y clábo.

D. De que síruen la S. y clábo ?

G. No áy mas mal sordo que el que no quière entender, y a buen entendedor pocas palábras.

D. Con las que v. m. ha dicho, no se puede rastreár ni dar alcánce à ésta su Diósa.

G. V. m. fábe que la S. y cláuo son señáles de sujeción, y esclauitúd.

D. Que ? v. m. quière dezír que es escláuo ?

G. Digo lo, y assi es verdád.

D. Quien lo captiuó ?

G. Amór.

D. Pués como ? dizen que es libre. Supplicóle me diga que es amor, porque de las raçones que me ha dicho, me han nacido mil dificultádes.

G. Amór

*superficies of her Angelicall face, no man can behold it, not remaining dazeled ; her haire is like the rayes of Phebus, which illuminate and chase away the tenebries of my soule.*

L. *You haue dreamed on some Nymph of Tagus.*

G. *This is no Nymph imagined, but she who surpasseth Venus, and excels Diana : Finally, she is the soule of my soule, the life which preserveth mine, the end and terme of all my desires and hopes : her long, white, and faire hands, only for me seeme short, and shrunken up.*

L. *You had neede make haste, for according to the taske you take, you'l scarce make an end to day of your mistresse prayses ; and you speake them with so excellent a grace, that I am not weary with attention : but tell me if it please you, who shee may be, and in what place shee liueth.*

G. *In my heart, where shee hath put the S. and laue.*

L. *What signifies the S. and laue ?*

G. *Theres none more deafe then hee that will not heare, and a word's enough to the wise.*

L. *With those which you haue said, I cannot informe my selfe of this your Goddesse.*

G. *You know that S. and laue, are tokens of subjection and seruitude.*

L. *What ? will you say that you are a Slave ?*

G. *I say so, and it is true.*

L. *Who captined you ?*

G. *Loue.*

L. *How so ? They say that he is free. I beseech you let me understand what is loue, for vpon that which you haue told me, I finde a thousand difficulties to arise.*

G. *Loue*

G. Amór es vn Diós, vna Deydád, el hño que llaman de Venus, vna passión del alma, vn fuégo del alquitrán, que la consúme, y deríte; vn raudál impetuóso, que ahóga, y anéga la raçón, sin que se pueda valér de las vélas, y rémos de buenas consideraciones: finalmente, es vn Réy tiráno, de cuyo império y mando, pocos o ningunos escápan, sino es los que huyen. Este Réy, raudál, fuégo, passión, deydád o Diós, predomína, señoréa, y sujéta de tal suérte y manera a los hombres, que no se pueden llamar libres, ni horros, mas escláuos, y captiuos; aherrojádos con vna esclauitud dulce, con vn captiuério amable, y con vna sugesión voluntária.

D. Si voluntário, luego libre; si libre, no forçoso: si no es forçoso agráuo le haze v.m. en llamar-se escláuo.

G. Es libre, pués lo queremos, pero este querer es forçoso, y ésta fuérça voluntária.

D. En el alma me holgaría de hablar à ésta dama, para dezírle lo mucho que déue à v.m.

G. Nada deue quíen todo lo meréce, y mucho meréce quíen nada déue.

D. Dexémos éstas methaphisícas, y dígame quíen es.

G. V.m. sabe que à ninguna mugér del mundo pueden quadrár tan bien las alabánças referidas como a sí propia, y así ninguna otra puede ser mi dama, mi señóra, y mi bien.

D. Es posible? con esse fabór no piénso oy comer.

G. El fabór ha de venir de v. m. que es poderósa para darlo.

D. V.m. lo tiéne de quíen lo estima mas que de mi,

G. Love is a God, a Deitie, one called the sonne of Venus, a passion of the soule, a wild-fire, which consumeth and melteth it; an impetuous torrent, which doth drowne and deuoure reason, not permitting it to make profit of the Sailes and Ores of good considerations: In brieft, he is a tyrannous King, from whose command and Empire, but few or none escape, excepting those that flie. This King, torrent, fire, passion, Deitie or God, doth in such wise predominate, gouerne, and subiect men, that they neither can be termed free, nor exempt from seruitude, but slaues, and captiues; enchained with a sweet bondage, with an amiable captivity, and with a voluntarie subiection.

L. If voluntarie, it is then free; if free, not forced; and if it be not forced, you doe ill to giue your selfe the name of slaue.

G. It is free, seeing we are willing of it, but this will be forced, and this force is voluntarie.

L. I should be heartily glad to speake unto this Lady, that I might tell her how much she is indebted to you.

G. Who meriteth all, cannot be indebted, and much merit they who are in debt nothing.

L. Let vs leaue these supernaturall things, and tell me who she is.

G. You know that the like praises cannot so well correspond with any woman as with your selfe, and so no other can be my Lady, my Mistresse, and my good.

L. Is it possible? Truly after so great a fauour I haue nothing to desire.

G. The fauour is to come from you, who are powerful to grant it.

L. You haue it of her whose you more estimate than mine,

mi, y a quien conuiénen mejor esos epítetos, y alabanzas.

G. No es nacida, ni puede ser nazca otra que merezca lo que v. m. merece, ni quien pueda hazerme fabor semejante.

D. Ahora veo que se burla de mi.

G. Juro por vida de v. m. y mia que no lo hago; sino que como siento las cosas, las digo; y como las digo, las cumplo.

D. A otro perro con esse huéssio, no soy de las simples que se van, que creen por euangélio las palabras de los hombres, siendo mas engañosas que las de la serpiente, y mas suaves que voz de Sirena, que cantando mára.

G. En mala opinión tiene v. m. a los hombres.

D. Antes no los tengo en muy buena, porque *Quién malas mañas ha; tarde, o nunca las perderá.*

G. No ay regla sin excepción.

D. Esta no la tiene, y assi me ratifico en dezir, que ningún hombre guarda las reglas, y leyes del amor.

G. Que? el amor tiene estatutos, y ordenanças para los que militan debáxo de su vandéra, y estandarte?

D. Quien duda?

G. Quien no lo sabe como yo; suplico a v. m. por lo que mas quiera, me diga esos estatutos, y pragmáticas de amor.

D. V. m. piensa jurar por su vida, y creo que se engaña.

G. Si pensasse que esse crédito fuéssse verdadero, bastaría para quitarme la vida.

D. La mia perdería, si v. m. se persuadiéssse lo contrario.

G. Dexémos

mine, and to whom those Epithetes and praises are more proper.

G. She yet is, and euer shall be vnborne, who may equall you, or who may doe me the like grace and fauour.

L. Now I perceiue you mocke me.

G. I sweare by both our lines I doe not; but as I know the things, I speake them; and as I speake them, I accomplish them.

L. Keepethis for others, I pray you, I am none of those simple ones, who hold the words of men for Gospel, being more deceitfull then them of the Serpent, and sweeter then the voice of a Siren, who singing murdereth.

G. You haue an ill opinion of men.

L. It may be I haue no very good one: For he that hath ill tricks, will leaue them either late or neuer.

G. There is no rule without exception.

L. This hath not any, and so I confirme my speech, that the rules and lawes of Loue are obserued by no man.

G. What? hath Loue statutes, and ordinances for them that fight vnder his colours, and Ensigne?

L. Who doubteth it?

G. They which know it no better then I doe; I beseech you by that you most of all loue, to informe me of those statutes, and pragmaticks of Loue.

L. You thinke you sweare by your owne life, but I beleene you deceiue your selfe.

G. If I thought that beleefe were true, it would be sufficient to make an end of me.

L. I should detest my owne life, did you perswade your selfe the contrarie.

G. Let



G. Dexémos esta cuestión indecisa, y hágame la merced que le suplico.

D. Quien le ha dicho que lo sê?

G. Persuádo me lo, porque quien tan bien sabe amartelár desdenando, sin duda se le alcanza todo lo demas.

D. Por acortár razones, y persuadir a v.m. à que dexé su intento, commençando diré los epítetos de que los amantes déuen estár adornados; podrá servirua de hazér le desistír deste combáte, viéndo la dificultad al ójo.

G. Si por dar vn asáto a esta fortaléça, me fuere necessario perdér cien mil vidas, perdér las he, antes que tórne el pie atrás.

D. Aunque pierda docientas, no la escalará; pues la defienden razón, honestidád, y prudéncia: mas tornádo a propósito, los atribútos que amor quíere que sus soldádos tengan, son tantos quantas léuas áy en el A, B, C: porque así como los niños comiénçan siémpre por ella, sin la qual no pueden aprender; así amor quíere que todos los que se an de exercitár en su arte, les siruan de rudiméntos, fundamentos, y cánjas, sobre quien el edificio asiente. Ha de ser pues el enamorado. *Alaguéño, beníguo, cortés, dadivóso, elegante, firme, galán, honesto, inuentór, lisonjéro, múdo, noveléro, ofrecedór, prudente, quieto, recatádo, solícito, temeróso, vigilánte, joven, y zelánte.*

G. Estos renómbres, o calidádes de que deul estár dotádo el enamorado algunos me parécen superfluos, y otros contrários al mesmo amor. De que sirve que vn galán sea honesto; siéndo la honestidád contrária a sus desléos?

D. E

G. Let us leave this controuersie undecided, and doe me the fauour which I desire you.

L. Who hath told you that I know it?

G. I imagine so, for who so well knowes how to make men become amorous by disdainning them, without doubt is not ignorant of the rest.

L. To cut off reasoning, and to perswade you that you giue ouer your intent, I will begin to declare the Epithets wherewith all Lovers ought to bee adorned; perhaps it may serue to make you desist from this combat, perceiuing the difficulty so apparent.

G. If to giue one assault vnto this Fortresse, I am to lose a hundred thousand lines, they all shall perish, rather then giue backe a foot.

L. Although you lose two hundred thousand, you will not scale it; seeing that reason, honesty, and prudence doe defend it: but returning to our purpose, the attributes which Loue requireth in his Souldiers, are as many in number as there be letters in the Alphabet: for as children doe still make their entrance by the same, without which they are not able to learne; so loue will that all such as desire to exercise themselves in his Art, make benefit of rudiments, foundations, and upon which the edifice may stand firme. The Loner ought therefore to be, a flatterer, benigne, curteous, liberall, elegant, constant, gallant, honest, inuentiue, faire spoken, mute, a reporter of newes, a promiser, prudent, quiet, discreet, carefull, timorous, vigilant, young, and ialous of the honour of his mistresse.

G. Some of these surnames and qualities, wherewith the Loner ought to be endowed, seeme vnto me superfluous, and others contrary to Loue it selfe. To what purpose is it that a Gallant be honest, when honesty is contrary to his desires?

R

L. The



D. El galán que no se muéstra honesto, jamás alcançará el fin dellos: porque la dama q̄ conóce en su enamorado vn deséo de deshonrrarla, no solo le due aborrecér, más huyr del como de vna viuóra ponçosa.

G. Para que ha de ser el enamorado inuentór?

D. Porque las mugéres sómos amigas de cosas nueúas.

G. Y para que el ser alaguéno, y lisonjéro, siendo cosas tan aborrecibles.

D. Estan grande la fuérça de la lisonja, que aunque clara y manifestaméte se conózca, es siempre tenida por alabánça; particularméte de las mugéres, que aunque sean feas como vn escarauájo, se persuáden ser otra Venus, o Diana: y lo que mas es, que si a vna vieja de ochénta años le dizen niña, es tan grande la fuérça del alabánça, que crée, y tiéne por ciérto ser así, y que ayér salió de mantillas, o que los años en ella han sido días.

G. Buéna es essa razón, pero de que sirue prometer lo que muchas vézes no se puede cumplír.

D. Aunque así sea, siémpre las proméssas manifestan la buena voluntád, que es causa de imprimír en el coraçón de la dama las espécies del amante, que con dificultád se bórran, particularméte si son las primeras: por que el amor priméro dificultoso es de olvidar.

G. Pedia que el enamorado sea temeroso, es querer vna cosa contrária al mesmo amor, y como dizen, al moço vergonçoso el diáblo lo llebó a palácio.

D. Este temor no ha de ser de modo que acobarde, o quite la osadía de acometer todas las impréssas que el amor le ofréce: solo se ha de mostrár tenerlo de

L. The Gallant that not sheweth himselfe honest, shall neuer attaine to the end of them: for the Lady which perceiueth in her Suiter, but one desire of dishonoring her, not only ought to abhorre him, but flie from him as from a poisonous viper.

G. Wherefore should he be an Inuentor?

L. Because we women are desirous of nouelties.

G. And why a flatterer in behauiour, and in words, being things so generally abhorred?

L. So great is the force of flatterie, that notwithstanding it be plainly and manifestly knowne, it is alwaies taken for praise; particularly of women, who although as blacke as a beetle, perswade themselves to be a second Venus or Diana: and what is more, let one call an old woman of fourescore yeares standing, a little girle, the effect of praise is such, that she beleeueth, and holdeth it for certaine to be so, and that but yesterday she went out of her swadling clouts, or that the yeares passed haue beene daies.

G. That is a good reason: but to what end is it to promise that which many times cannot be effected?

L. Although it be so, yet alwaies promises doe manifest the good will, and imprint in a Ladies heart the species of the Louer, which cannot easily be blotted out, especially if they be the first; for the first loue is hard to be forgotten.

G. To wish that a loue be fearefull, is to desire a thing contrarie to loue, and as we say, A faint heart neuer won faire Lady.

L. This feare ought not to be such, as to make him a coward, or take away his courage from executing as many enterprises as loue presents him with: only he must

de perdér la jóya que possée en aêto, o en deféo. Este miêdo haze que la dama multiplica los fabóres para fortificár en su amór a su medroso amánte; el qual gána con el temór, lo que no huuiéra hecho siêdo osádo.

G. Como hará para ser jouén el viêjo rancio?

D. Si el viêjo se muéstra móço en sus aciónes, las damas le amarán mas que al móço, que por ellas quière que lo têngan por cáno decrépito.

G. La glósa es mejór que el testo: no sê como pueda seruir a v. m. la que me ha hécho, sino suplicándole que pués ha sido mi maéstra, así séa la mira y blanco adonde se encamínen mis acciónes, y defcos.

D. Aconséjole búsqe otro terréro adonde pueda encaminár sus fléchas.

G. Jamás mi alma buscará otra glória, ni bienaventurança.

D. A otra puérta, que esta no se ábre.

G. En la de v. m. pediré limósna, aquí perdí una agúja; aquí la tengo de hallár.

D. A otro perro con esse huêso, y a Diós que me mudo.

G. Plegue a el que sea de cruél en mánfa.

D. Quedese v. m. con Diós, que es tarde.

G. No áy cosa mas ciérta, pués el Sol se póne, y con su ausencia mi alma quéda como vn cuérpo sin ella.

D. Béso las mãos de v. m.

G. Yo las de v. m. milláres de vézes.

*Fin del segundo Dialogo.*

must seeme to haue it, of losing the Jewell that he possesseth actually, or in desire. And this feare causeth the Lady multiplie her fauours to fortifie the loue of her timorous Suiter; who gaineth that by feare, which he would haue lost by rashnesse.

G. How shall a mouldie old fellow doe to make himselfe seeme young?

L. If he shew himselfe greene in his actions, Ladies will loue him better then the young man, who by the same appeareth to be older then he.

G. The exposition is better then the text: I know not how I shall be able to acknowledge the fauour which you haue done me, unlesse in beseeching you, that since you haue beene my mistresse, you be also the marke and white whereto my actions and desires may be directed.

L. I counsell you to seeke some other But to let flie your shafts at.

G. My soule shall neuer seeke other glorie or felicitie then your selfe.

L. To another gate, for this will not be opened.

G. At yours I will beg for almes: Here I haue lost a needle, and here I am to finde it.

L. Keepe that for some other body: and so farewell, for my humour changeth.

G. I pray God it be from cruell to tractable.

L. Retire your selfe, for it is late.

G. There is nothing more certaine, seeing the Sun setteth, and with his absence my soule remaineth as a body without one.

L. I kisse your hands.

G. And I yours Lady a million of times.

*An end of the second Dialogue.*



*DIALOGO TERCERO,  
RO, ENTRE DOS DAMAS  
Llamadas Doña Maria,  
y Doña Anna.*

*Doña Anna.*

**E**N el alma me pésa que v.m. me háya ganádo por la mano, yo dezía a mi Escudéro fuéffe a saber si la hallaría en casa, porque quería yr a besarle las manos, y cumplir con mi obligación.

*D. M.* La mia es de hazérlo; suplicádo a v.m. me perdóne el no hauér lo hécho antes: la causa ha sido la enfermedad de Don Diégo.

*D. A.* Que es lo que v.m. me dize? el señor Don Diégo ha estado malo?

*D. M.* Si lo ha estado me pregunta, como? ha pensádo morir.

*D. A.* Por vida de francisquito que no lo he sauído. Que enfermedad ha tenido?

*D. M.* Un dolor de costádo, que en cinco días los Médicos le hauían defauciádo.

*D. A.* Agráuió me ha hécho v.m. en no abisarme, pues saue quan feruidóra le soy.

*D. M.* V.m. me háze en todo merced: fué tan repentina la enfermedad, que no me dió lugar para reboluérme, ni pensar en lo que deuía. Gracias sean



*THE THIRD DIA-  
LOGVE BETWEENE TWO  
Gentlewomen, the one called Doña Ma-  
ria, and the other Doña Anna.*

*Doña Anna.*

**I** Am sorry at my heart that you haue preuented me: I bid my man goe know if I should finde you at home, for I was willing to goe thither, that I might kisse your hands, and accomplish my obligation.

*D. M.* Mine is to doe so, beseeching you to pardon me that I haue not done it before: the infirmitie of Don Diego hath beene the cause of it.

*D. A.* What's that you tell me? Senior Don Diego hath beene ill?

*D. M.* How, aske you me if he haue beene so? why he thought he should haue died.

*D. A.* Now as I liue I did not know so much. What disease hath he had?

*D. M.* A paine in his side, so great, that in fure daies the Physitians had giuen him ouer.

*D. A.* You haue done mee wrong in not letting mee vnderstand it, seeing you know how much I am your seruant.

*D. M.* You doe me fauour in all things: the sickness was so sodaine, that it gaue me not leisure to turne my selfe, nor to thinke vpon what was requisite. Thanks be

R 4

seán dadas a Diós, que me ha mirado, con ojos de piedad.

*D. A.* Como se hálla a óra?

*D. M.* A seruicio de v.m. fuera de peligro.

*D. A.* Leuánta se?

*D. M.* Oy ha sido el primer día.

*D. A.* Que médico le ha visitado?

*D. M.* El Dotór Martínez, que sin dúa es el mejor de España.

*D. A.* Sángra mucho.

*D. M.* Mi marido tenía gránde necesidad dello.

*D. A.* Lo que es buéno para el hígado, es malo para el bazo; para vnas enfermedades es bueno el sangrar mucho, y para otras no. El mesmo nos contaba, que se hauía hallado en vna consúta el otro día, donde estában séys médicos, entre los quáles no se hallaron dos de vn mesmo parecer.

*D. M.* Si va à dezir la verdad: créo que los Médicos házen como Zandajuélo, vno de los mas famósos de Granada, el qual tenía todas las enfermedades ordinarias escritas en vn papel, y las púrgas, jaráues, y otras medicinas en otro. Y quando le llamában para que visitáse algún enfermo, no quería que le dixéssen que enfermedad tenía, porque dáua a entender que en viéndo al enfermo, y en tocando-le el pulso, conócía la enfermedad, y su malicia. Nunca recetaba en casa del enfermo, porque segun el dezía, nengún médico hauía de ordenar nada, sin estudiárllo primero (como sería justo que lo hiziéssen) así lo hazía nuéstro buén Zandajuélo; porque en llegando a su casa, tomaba los dos papéles, y sobre el de las enfermedades dexáua caer vn dado, y quantos señaláua, tantas éran las enfermedades que aquel enfermo tenía, mas la principal éra la sobre quien el dado se paraba:

*bee to God that hee hath beheld mee with the eies of mercy.*

*D. A.* How is he at this instant?

*D. M.* Out of danger, at your seruice.

*D. A.* Doth he rise?

*D. M.* This was the first day.

*D. A.* What Physitian hath visited him?

*D. M.* Doctor Martinez, who without doubt is the best in Spaine.

*D. A.* He causeth his patients to bleed much.

*D. M.* My husband had great need of it.

*D. A.* What is good for the liuer, is ill for the spleene: for some infirmities it is good to bleede much, and for others not. He himselfe told vs that the other day hee was present in a consultation, where there were six Physitians, amongst which not two of them were found to be of one opinion.

*D. M.* If it behoueth to say the truth, I beleue that Physitians doe like Zandajuélo, one of the most famous of Granada, who had all the ordinary diseases written in a paper, and the purges, syrropes, and other drugges, in another. And when they called him to visit some sicke person, he was not willing that they should tell him what disease he had, for he made them beleue that in seeing him, and touching his pulse, he knew his infirmities and grieffe. Hee neuer prescribed any thing in the sicke parties house, saying that Physitians ought to ordaine nothing, without studying vpon it first (as it should be fit that they did it) and so did our good Zandajuélo; for returning home to his house, he tooke the two papers, and vpon that of the infirmities let fall a dye, and how many it was, so many were the diseases of his Patient, and the principall was that whereupon the dye stayed: The same he did vpon the paper of the medicines

parába : lo mesmo hazía sobre el papel de las medicinas, y la que el dado tocába éra la que ordenáua, y tantas vézes la repetía quantas el pintába : quando tornáua para ordenár, éran tantas las aréngas que hazía, los discursos que formába, y las razones con que mostráua el oríen, y fundamento del mal, que aun- que al enfermo le doliéise la cabeça, le hazía creer que éra la mano, o el pie. El mundo se íua tras el, y éran tantas las cúras, que de ordinário hazía, que su fama se estendió por España, y de toda ella lo en- biáuan a buscar : a la hora de su muerte confesó a vn amigo súyo el modo que en curár tenía, y dixo que pensáua hauér cumplido bien con su oficio, y me- jór que los ótros, porque el dexába en las manos de Diós, y de la suérte, el saber la enfermedad, y la me- dicina própria para ella ; mas que los otros, o con malicia, o con ignorancia matában muchos hom- bres.

*D. A.* Diós me libre de tal gente ; lo peór que áy es, que mal que nos pése hémos de venir vn dia a ca- ér en sus manos.

*D. M.* A dóña Ysabel de medráno ha pensado matár vn médico, con vna púr- ga.

*D. A.* Está en ésta ciudad ?

*D. M.* Como si está ? v. m. se desayúna aóra de esto ?

*D. A.* No ha sino quatro dias que me dixo su sue- gra hauía receuido cartas, que no vendrían en seys me- ses.

*D. M.* Verdád es que su hño así lo escriuió, y vrdió, pero uno pién- sa el vayo, y otro quien lo en- silla.

*D. A.* Cu-

dicines, and ordained that which the die touched, apply- ing it so many times as were the number of the spots he threw with it : when he returned to make his ordina- ces, so many were the artificiall speeches that he made, the discourses that he formed, and the reasons that he al- leged, to shew the originall, and foundation of the grie- fe, that although the sicke person had a paine in the head, he made him belecue it was in his hand, or foot. All the world sought after him, and the cures were so many which he ordinarily did, that his fame was extended throughout Spaine, and from all parts thereof hee was sent vnto : At the houre of his death hee confessed to a friend of his, the forme that hee had vsed in his cures : saying he thought that he had well performed his duty, and better then others, for that he left in the hands of God, and Fortune, the knowledge of the disease and the medicine proper thereto ; but that other Physitians, ei- ther through malice or ignorance, are the death of ma- ny men.

*D. A.* God deliuer vs from such people ; the worst is, that ill as it grieues vs, we must one day fall into their hands.

*D. M.* A Physitian thought to kill Doña Isabel of Medrano with a purge.

*D. A.* Is she in this city ?

*D. M.* How if shee be ? doe you make a wonder at that ?

*D. A.* Not aboue foure daies since her mother in law told me she had receiued letters, and that they would not come this halfe yeare.

*D. M.* True it is that her sonne so writ, and plotted it ; but man purposeth and God disposeth : one thing thinkes the horse, and another thing hee that saddles him.

*D. A.* Relate-

D. A. Cuénte me v.m. lo que passa, que me tiene suspensa.

D. M. V. m. sabe bien los altivaxos que en este casamiento hubo, y la contradición de los parientes de Doña Ysabel, porque conocían bien que Don Martín Núñez sería siempre el mesmo, que *Quien malas mañas ha; tarde, o nunca las perderá: y Quien ruyn es en su villa, también lo será en Sevilla; y aun Quien haze un cesto hará ciento.* Finalmente se casaron, y acabada la boda, y tornaboda, el marido persuadió con buenas palábras a la buena Señora, que fuéssen en romería a Santiago de Galicia: ella se lo creyó. *Quien cree de ligero, agua coge en arnero: y Quien mal no haze, en mal no piensa.* Tomaron todas las joyas de oro, plata, y piedras preciosas, que Doña Ysabel tenía muchas, y muy buenas, y con grande cantidad de dineros, se pusieron en camino, en compañía de dos amigos de Don Martín, tales como el; que como dicen. *Dime con quien vienes, y dirte he que mañas has, y no con quien naces, sino con quien paces; una oveja farnósa, hará ciento.* Fue con ellos la Ordóñez.

D. A. Quién es esta Ordóñez?

D. M. Vna de las mas malas mugéres del mundo: vna putilla, que ha rebuelto mas casas que pelos tiene en la cabeça, que son tan pocos, que se pueden bien contar, porque siempre está llena de buvas.

D. A. Y como permitió Doña Ysabel, que la acompañasse vna tan mala hembra?

D. M. No lo sabía la pobre señora. Prosiguiendo mi cuento, con esta compañía, dos criados, y vna criada, en vn coche de retorno, llegaron a Segovia,

D. A. Relate unto me what hath passed, for I long to heare it.

D. M. You well know the difficulties that there were in this marriage, and the contradiction made by the kindred of Doña Isabel, for they were well assured that Don Martin Nuñez would be alwaies the same man, for that euill customes are hardly to be left: Who is wicked in his owne Towne, will be so likewise in Seuill; and againe, who maketh one basket, will make a hundred. Finally they were married, and the wedding, and all after-feasting ended, the husband with faire words perswaded the good Gentlewoman to goe on Pilgrimage to S. Iames of Galicia: she gaue credit to it. Who is over-apt to beleene, is subiect to repent: and who doth no euill, thinketh vpon none. They tooke all the Jewels of gold, siluer, and precious stones, for Doña Isabel had many and very faire ones, and with a great summe of money that she had, they undertooke their journey, accompanied by two friends of Don Martin, such as himselfe; for as they say, Such as a mans company, such his manners: Ill education corrupts nature; One scabbed sheepe will infect a hundred. Ordoñez went with them moreouer.

D. A. Who is that Ordoñez?

D. M. One of the wickedst women of the world: a whore, that hath beene the ouerthrow of more families, then she hath haires vpon her head, which are so few, that one may easily count them, for she is alwaies full of the pox.

D. A. And how could Doña Isabel endure, that so pernicious a creature should accompanie her?

D. M. The poore gentlewoman did not know so much. Now proceeding in my tale, with this companie, two Serving-men, and one maid, they arrived at Segovia,

y después de hauer visto la puente, que dizen hizo el diáblo, y otras cosas curiosas de aquel lugar, Don Martín rogó à todas fuéssen a veér con el vna prima suya Religiosa, que en aquella ciudad estaua : haviendo la visto, a Doña Ysabel le tomó gana de entrar a veér el monasterio, porque su marido se lo persuadió : entraron solas las mugéres, y los hombres hiziéron, *La yda del cuérno marino, que fué y numo vino.* Estando aun la señóra doña Ysabel, la Ordóñez, y su criada, La Abadesa reçiuio vna carta de Don Martín, en que le suplicaua entretuuiéssse allí à su mugér, entretanto que el íua al Escuriál, por vn negocio de gránde importáncia, de donde tornaría dentro de dos días : los quáles no éran aun cumplidos quando reçiuio otra, en que la rogáua no dexásse salir à su mugér hásta que voluiéssse, por que el Ráy le mandáua yr con vna ambaxáda à Francia, y que dentro de seys meses tornaría : Suplicáudo le tuuiéssse grande cuénta con la Ordóñez, porque éra vna mugér disolúta, y que si la castigáua, y hazía hazér peniténzia, haría vn sacrificio muy agradable a Dios. Doña Ysabel quedó muérta, la Ordóñez hecha vn diáblo, y la pobre criada sin saber que dezía de tal carta.

D. A. Iesús ! que me cuénta v. m. ? quedáron les algúnas jóyas, o dinéros ?

D. M. Como en mi ójo : todo se lo lleuó Don Martín.

D. A. Y era verdád que yua à Francia ?

D. M. Como v. m. ; fuéssse à las Indias, adónde segun he oydo dezír, entretiéne vna hermosa Indiana. Finalménte doña Ysabel escriuió à vn tio suyo, que al cabo de dos meses de reclusión ha ydo por élla, y llegaron

*ia, in a hired Coach, and having seene the bridge, which they say, was made by the deuill, and other curious things of that place, Don Martin desired them to beare him companie to visit a cousin of his, that was a religious woman in that Citie : after they had seene her, Doña Isabel was desirous ( at the perswasion of her husband ) to see the Monasterie : the women only went in, and the men made the voyage of the Marine Crow, that went and nere returned more. Doña Isabel, Ordonez, and her maid being then within, the Abesse receiued a letter from Don Martin, by which he beseeched her to giue his wife entertainment, while he went to the Escorial, about a businesse of great importance, from whence within two daies he should retorne : the which were not yet accomplished when she receiued another, wherein he desired her not to suffer his wife to goe forth till his retorne, for that the King had commanded him to goe with an Embassage into France, and that within sixe moneths he should come backe : beseeching her to looke narrowly to Ordonez, for she was a dissolute woman, and that if she did chastise her, and make her doe penance, she should performe a sacrifice acceptable to God. Doña Isabel at this letter, remained as one without life, Ordonez turned deuill, and the poore maid not knowing what to say or thinke.*

D. A. Iesus ! what doe you relate ? Had they any Jewels or money left them ?

D. M. As much as in mine eie : Don Martin carried away all.

D. A. And was it true that he went to France ?

D. M. As true as you did ; he got him to the Indies, where ( as I haue heard ) he entertaines a beauntious Indian. To conclude, Doña Isabel writ vnto an uncle of hers, who after two moneths of reclusion is gone for her, and



llegaron el juéves à la tarde, adonde queriendo purgár, vn Médico le ha dado vna beuida tan fuerte que ha pensádo morir.

*D. A.* Por vida de quien sóy, que es vna historia estraña; pero diga me v. m. que hauía hécho la Ordoñez a Don Martín, que tan mal la quería?

*D. M.* Es otra historia apárte. Don Martín entretenía a la Ordoñez muy honrradaménte, y vn día yéndo a su casa al anocheçer, tomó la lláue de la puerta como solía; y estando acostádo, oyó roncár de baxo de su cáma; y preguntádo à la Ordoñez, quien roncáua en su aposéto, le dixo que era vn cordéro que hauía comprádo para Pásqua, y para pruéua dello le començó allamar, y el à responder valando; mas ni el válido, ni ronquido le parecieron à Don Martín naturales; y así leuantándose con su espáda desnúda, començó a punçar debaxo de su cáma: el cordéro, cabrito, o cabrón, començó à hablar, pidiéndo perdón, y misericórdia. Hizo venir Don Martín a sus criádos con vna hácha, y hallaron vn Aguazil viejo vestido a lo soldado: hizieron le desnudar, y después de hauérle muy bien acotado en compañía de la Ordoñez, aguardaron à que fuéssé entrádo el día, y pusieron al pobre diáblo en cueros en médio de la calle: el qual cómo se vió desnúdo, començó à corrér por médio del lugar, diciendo; déxen me pasar, que va sobre apuéstá: siguieron le grande cantidad de mucháchos; el se descaulló dellos lo mejor que pudo, y se metió en vn montecillo que está vna légua de la ciudad: jamás se ha sabído quien era, ni de que Religión. Por ésta burla Don Martín tenía grande ojaríça à la Ordoñez; la pobre pensó que éste enójo se le hauía ya passádo, y que quería reconciliárse con élla; pero salió le al

recués,

and they arrived upon Thursday in the evening, where being willing to purge himselfe, a Physitian hath giuen him so strong a poison, that he hath despaired of life.

*D. A.* As I-line it is a strange historie; but tell me, what had Ordoñez done to Don Martin, that he mist her so ill?

*D. M.* It is another story of it selfe. Don Martin entertained her very honourably, and one day going to her house towards night, he tooke the key of the doore as he was accustomed; and being laid downe, he heard a snoring under his bed: and demanding of Ordonez, who it was that snored in his chamber, she answered him a Lambe which she had bought against Easter, and for prooffe thereof began to call him, and he likewise to answer in bleating; but neither that nor the snorting seemed naturall to Don Martin; and so rising with his naked sword, he began to pricke with it under his bed: the Lambe, Kid, or Ram-Goat found a tongue to speake withall, desiring pardon and mercie. Don Martin made his men come with a Torch, and there they found an old Constable attired like a souldier: they stripped him, and after they had well whipped him in the presence of Ordonez, they staid till the breake of day, and then put this poore deuill naked in the midst of the street: who seeing himselfe in this plight, betooke himselfe to runne, saying, Let me passe for it is vpon a wagger: there followed him a great company of boyes; hee shifted from them the best he could, and got himselfe to a little mountaine, a league distant from the city: It was neuer knowne what he was, nor of what Religion. For this deceit Don Martin did greatly malice Ordonez, who beleeued his anger was already ouer, and that he was desirous to be reconciled vnto her: but it fell out quite contrary, for the Abbesse willing to keepe her some-  
S what



reué, porque, la Abadéfa queriéndola poner un poco en pretina, no solo no lo quería sufrir, pero dezía le mil insolencias, las quáles fuéron causa que la encerráron en vn aposénto, y le han hécho ayunar todo la Quarésma à pan, y água, dando le muy amonúdo la diciplina; élla *dana al diáblo al muérto, y ano à quien lo llorána*, pero a mas no poder, paciéncia, y barajar.

D. A. Yo créo que ni élla podría sufrir la austeridad deaquéllas buenas Religiosas, ni ellas su insolencia.

D. M. Assi es, porque cada obéxa con su pareja, ella se encontró con quien se las entendia, mas por no *echár la sogá tras el caldéro*, sufrió la tánda, y me han dicho que vino à amar tanto a la Abadéfa, que le hazia mil caricias.

D. A. Mano besa hombre, que la querria ver cortada hizo muy bien en hazer de la necesidad virtud: lástima me haze la pobre doña Ysabel. Quien presto se determina, presto se arrepiente, no quiso cuchár a los que le aconsejáuan su prouecho. Quien *no crée a buena madre, creerà à mala madrastra*.

D. M. Que le parece à v.m. de la locúra de doña Antonia?

D. A. Para entre nosótras, no sé de donde le viene tanto tóldo, porque no ha séys meses que traya vna ropa de vurato, y ayér la vi en el sermón con vna derafo morádo, aforrada de tafetán blanco, y vna vasquíña de tela de plata. No se puede negár, sino que tiene buen tálle: con las dos mános le podían tomar la cinturá. Las cuchilládas de la ropa tomádas con presillas de oro: vn verdugádo tan grande, que apenas podía entrár por la puérta de la Capilla.

D. M. Tam-

what short, she not only would not endure it, but reviled her, which was the cause that they shut her into a chamber, and made her fast the whole Lent with bread and water, giuing her very often the discipline; she cursst them all to the deuill, but because she knew no remedie, she was faine to be patient, and shuffle it ouer.

D. A. I beleeeue that neither she could suffer the austerity of those good religious women, nor they her insolency.

D. M. It is true, for like will to like; she met with those that knew her full well, but to auoid casting the belue after the hatchet, she endured the taske, and I haue beene told she fell so farre in loue with the Abbess, that she made her a thousand shewes of her affection.

D. A. Many will speake one faire that could wish to see their throat cut; she did wisely to make a vertue of necessitie: but for poore Doña Isabel I am grieued. Who determines suddenly, repenteth instantly; she would not giue care to them that counseld her for her good: who beleeues not a good Mother, shall credit an ill Stepmother.

D. M. How like you the folly of Doña Antonia?

D. A. To speake betweene our selues, I know not from whence she hath so much brauery, for within these six moneths she had on a gowne of Serge, and yesterday I saw her at the Sermon, in one of murrey Satten, lined with white Taffata, and a petticoate of cloth of siluer. It cannot be denyed, but that she hath a good shape, for with two hands one might take the compasse of her body. The slashes of her gowne are tacked with loopes of gold, and her Verdingall was so great, that shee could hardly enter at the Chappell doore.

S 2

D M. I

*D. M.* También yo la vi, y me espanté; porque bien sabémos quien es ella, y quien su marido.

*D. A.* Después que el Duque del Infantado entra en su casa, ha comenzado ha dezirle bien el náype.

*D. M.* Allá se lo áya Marta con sus póllos. Los cuidádos del asno mátan al Obispo: pues su marido gusta dello yo también.

*D. A.* La cadena que lleuáua el otro día la rifaron quatro Caualléros, y el que la ganó se la dió: si el Duque lo sabe, no les arriéndo la ganancia.

*D. M.* Quién era por vida de v.m.

*D. A.* No querría dezirlo à nadie, aunque diziéndose lo à v. m. haré cuenta que nenguno lo sabe. Don Iuán Vrtado se la dió.

*D. M.* No me díze v. m. náda de nuéuo, porque mas ha de quinze dias que dóña Catelina Mendez me contó la amistad de ésta mugér con esse caualléro.

*D. A.* Yo se la conté à ella en secreto.

*D. M.* Las mugéres no lo podemos guardár si nos lo encárgan. A este propósito contaré à v. m. lo que sucedió ocho días ha en nuestra calle, si no la cánso.

*D. A.* No lo puede hazér v. m. antes recbiré en ello gran mercéd.

*D. M.* Fué pues el caso, que la hija del mercader del cantón de Santiágo estáua preñada, sin saberlo sus pádres, ni persona alguna de la ciudad: yéndo pues à ganár el jubiléo, tomaron le los dolóres del parto; la pobre móça no sabía que hazér, ni à quien descubrírse: llegándo à mi calle: entró en casa de vna conocida suya, y echándose à sus píes le pidió con lágrimas, y grande encarecimíento la socorriése, y guardáse su honrra, y la de sus pádres: la mugér se lo prometió con muchas veras, y assí lo hizo: por-  
que

*D. M.* I saw her likewise, and was much amazed, for we well know who shee is, and who her husband.

*D. A.* Since the Duke of Infantado visiteth her house, the world hath begunne to mend with her.

*D. M.* Why should wee meddle with that? Let vs not talke of what is nothing vnto vs: seeing her husband likes it, I like it also.

*D. A.* The chaine that she wore the other day, had bin rifled by foure Gentlemen, and he which won it, gaue it her: If the Duke know it, there will be somewhat to doe.

*D. M.* Who was it I pray you?

*D. A.* I would not name him to any one, although telling it to you, I shall make account that no body knowes of it. Don Iohn Vrtado gaue it her.

*D. M.* You tell me no newes, for it is about a fortnight since Lady Catherine Mendez told mee of the loue betwixt this woman and that Gentleman.

*D. A.* I told it her in secret.

*D. M.* We women cannot keepe a secret when it is giuen vs in charge. To this purpose I will tell you what happened in our street about a weeke agoe, if I am not troublesome.

*D. A.* You cannot be so, nay I shall take it for a very great curtesie.

*D. M.* Why then thus it was, that the Merchants daughter of the corner of S. Iames was great with child, neither her parents, nor any other person of the city knowing it: Now as she went to obtaine the Iubile, shee fell in labour; the poore wench knew not what to doe, nor to whom to disconer it: coming to our street, she went into a friends house, at whose feet she casting her selfe, desired her with teares and great importancy to succor her, and to preserue her owne and her parents honour: the woman faithfully promised her to doe so, and well performed

que con gran secreto embió à buscar vna partera, y vna áma, y dió à criar la criatura : Mas después de hauér parido, fué necesario dar à la parida vna vema de huéuo, y como ella no la tuuieffe, fué à pedirlo à su vezina, diziéndole con grande secreto, que le diese vn huéuo para la hija de aquel mercader, que haúa parido en su casa, encargándole el secreto : su vezina no se halló con lo que le pedía, y así fué à la otra vezina, haziéndole la mesma arénga, y como tan poco allí halláffe, pasó de vna en vna todas las casas de la calle, encargando à todas el secreto : de manera que antes que voluieffe à su casa, toda la vezindad sabía el desastre de la pobre moça, y antes de la noche lo sabían todos los de la ciudad.

*D. A.* Por esto dicen los hombres, que no áy que fiar en nosótras ; y no se engañan mucho, aunque poco mas se puede confiár déellos, porque *qual mau qual ménos, toda la lana es pelos : y entre ruyn ganádo poco áy que escoger.*

*D. M.* Como le va à doña Luyfa con su marido ? que me haúa dicho tenían algunas diferencias.

*D. A.* Al principio ella hazía la desdénosa, y agora el le pága en la mesma moneda.

*D. M.* Adonde las dan las toman. Pensó yr por lana, y ha buélto trasquiláda. Con licencia de v. m. que estárde.

*D. A.* Lo mas ciérto es, que yo no merézco mas tiempo gozár de la compañía de v. m.

*D. M.* V. m. meréce tanto, que por parecerme mi conuersación indigna de ocupár su buen entendimiento, me quéro yr ; basta lo que la he cansado.

*D. A.* La conuersación de v. m. es tan buena, que puede entretener los mejores entendimientos del mundo.

*D. M.* Bese

performed it ; for she sent very secretly to seeke a midwife, and a nurse to gine the infant sucke : But after she was brought to bed, it was requisite to gine her the yelke of an egge, and her hostesse not hauing any, went to desire one of her neighbour, speaking to her in great secret, to gine her an egge for the merchants daughter that was brought to bed in her house, charging her to bee secret : this neighbour had not that she sought for, and so she went to the second, making her the same speech : and as she not found one there neither she went from one house to another thorowout all the street, enioyning them all to secrecy : so that before she came home againe the whole neighbourhood knew of the poore wenchs distress, and before night it was familiar to the whole City.

*D. A.* For that reason doe men say, it is ill to put trust in women ; and they are not much deceined, although but little more confidence may bee put in them, for it is hard to say which are the better : and ther's but small choyce where the whole flocke is bad.

*D. M.* How goes it with Doña Luyfa and her husband ? I was told they were at oddes.

*D. A.* At the first she made it coy, and now he payes her in her owne coyne.

*D. M.* One hath commonly as good as they bring. She thought to goe for wooll, and hath returned shorne. With your fauours leaue, for it is late.

*D. A.* The most assured is, that I not deserue to enioy your company any longer.

*D. M.* So great are your deserts, that by reason I esteeme my conuersation unworthy the exercising of your excellent vnderstanding, I will take my leaue ; It is sufficient that I haue wearied you.

*D. A.* Your conuersation is so good, that it may entertaine the most pregnant wits of the world.

*D. M.* I

*D. M.* Beso las mãos de v. m. por la que me háze; que aunque sean burlas, no déxo de conoer mi obligación.

*D. A.* V. m. sabe bien, que no me burlo, pues conoce lo que meréce.

*D. M.* Será por ser la mas humilde criada de v. m.

*D. A.* Yo lo soy de v. m.

*D. M.* Béso las manos de v. m. mil vézes.

*D. A.* Yo las de v. m. cien mil.

*D. M.* Yo tornaré à subir si v. m. passa adelante.

*D. A.* Suplico a v. m. me permita yr hasta la puerta.

*D. M.* No passaré de aquí si v. m. no se torna.

*D. A.* Por obedecer à v. m.

*Fin del Dialogo tercero.*

**DIALOGO**

*D. M.* I give you infinite thanks for so great a favour as you doe me; for although they be mocks, I omit not to acknowledge my obligation.

*D. A.* You well know that I doe not mocke, since you are not ignorant of what you merit.

*D. M.* It shall befor that I am the most humble of your servants.

*D. A.* Nay I am yours.

*D. M.* I kisse your hands a thousand times.

*D. A.* And I yours a hundred thousand.

*D. M.* I will againe goe up if you passe any further.

*D. A.* I beseech you let me goe to the doore with you.

*D. M.* I will not stirre from hence, if you not returne.

*D. A.* To be obedient to you.

An end of the third Dialogue.

**THE**



**DIALOGO QUARTO,**  
ENTRE TRES CA-  
ualleros, llamados Don Iuan, Don  
Pedro, y Don Alonso.

**D. I.** Las de vosasté señor Don Pedro.

**D. P.** Beso las de vusté mi señor Don Iuán; adonde tan de mañana?

**D. I.** A casa de Don Alonso.

**D. P.** Yo también vóy allá: huélgome de haue  
encontrádo à v. m. para que vámos juntos.

**D. I.** Yo apostaré que venimos los dos à vna me-  
ma cosa.

**D. P.** Yo vóy à ver à su suégro que ha venido de  
Portugal.

**D. I.** Yo à lo mesmo, no sé si estará leuantádo.

**D. P.** Dúdolo según es pereçoso. Entre v. m.

**D. I.** No me lo mande v. m.

**D. P.** Suplicárse lo he.

**D. I.** En todo obedeceré à v. m. sino en esto:  
Passe.

**D. P.** No lo haré aunque nos anochezca aquí.

**D. I.** Entrémos que la puerta es harto ancha para  
los dos.

**D. P.** No me tire tan récio, que me hará abortár,  
aunque



**THE FOVRTH DIA-  
LOGVE BETWEENE THREE**  
Gentlemen, named Don Iohn, Don  
Pedro, and Don Alonso.

**D. I.** Kisse your hands Señor Don Pedro.

**D. P.** I yours Señor Don Iohn; whi-  
ther so early?

**D. I.** To Don Alonso's house.

**D. P.** I goe thither likewise; and am glad I haue met  
with you, that we may goe together.

**D. I.** Ill: venture a wager that we came both about  
one matter.

**D. P.** I goe to see his Father in law, who is come  
from Portugal.

**D. I.** I for the very same, I know not whither he will  
be up.

**D. P.** I doubt it, being that he is sluggish. Goe in sir.

**D. I.** Doe not command me that.

**D. P.** I beseech you.

**D. I.** I will obey you in all things sauing that: pray  
goe.

**D. P.** I will not doe it though wee stand heere till  
night.

**D. I.** Let's enter, the doore is wide enough for vs  
both.

**D. P.** Doe not pull me so hard, you'll make mee be  
delinered

aunque el aborto no será tan bueno como el de una cabra.

*D. A.* Que milagro es este? Los dos juntos, y tan de mañana?

*D. I.* Cuerpo de tal, con v. m. de mañana le parece à las diez?

*D. A.* Mi criédo me ha dicho que no eran sino las ocho.

*D. P.* Qual el Capellán: tal el sacristán. Su criado sabe que v. m. es amigo de levantarse tarde, y así habla a sabor de su paladar.

*D. I.* Como viene su suegro?

*D. A.* Bueno à servicio de v. m. ayer tarde se fué al cortijo à ver los peones.

*D. P.* Nuestra venida ha sido embálde?

*D. A.* Porqué?

*D. P.* Porque le veníamos à ver.

*D. A.* Según esto, no corre por mi la obligación de esta visita?

*D. I.* No huviéra venido, óy si no fuera por esta ocasión, y pues la he perdido, quiero que v. m. me la agradezca, y que corra por su cuenta.

*D. P.* Y yo también.

*D. A.* Si haré, si quieren que vámos a pasear nos al jardín, donde almorçaremos, si vs. ms. me la quieren hazer.

*D. I.* Que nos dará?

*D. A.* De un pernil de tocino cocido en vino blanco de Yepes, y de un salchicón de Milán.

*D. P.* Quiero el embite.

*D. I.* Yo también.

*D. A.* Vámos.

*D. I.* Si el señor Don Pedro comienga à escudriñar lo que áy en su aposento, no lo sacarán de aquí con tenaças.

*D. P.* No

delivered before my time, although the abortive will not be so good as that of a Goat.

*D. A.* What a miracle is this? both together and so early?

*D. I.* Body of me, doe you thinke it early at ten a clocke?

*D. A.* My man told me it was but eight.

*D. P.* Such as the Priest, such is the Clarke. Your man knows that you loue to rise late, and therefore speaks to content you.

*D. I.* How came your father in law?

*D. A.* Well at your seruice: yesterday in the euening hee went to his countrey house to see his day labourers.

*D. P.* Is then our comming in vaine?

*D. A.* Why?

*D. P.* Because we came to see him.

*D. A.* According to that, the bond of this visitation concernes not me.

*D. I.* I would not haue come to day had it not beene for this occasion; but since I haue lost it, I desire you to thanke me for it, and take it as to your selfe.

*D. P.* And I likewise.

*D. A.* I will doe so, provided that we goe walke to the Garden, where we will breake our fasts, may't please you to doe me the fauour.

*D. I.* What will you giue vs?

*D. A.* A Gammon of Bacon sod in white wine of Yepes, and a Milan sausage.

*D. P.* I accept of it.

*D. I.* And so doe I.

*D. A.* Let vs goe.

*D. I.* If Señor Don Pedro fall once to examine your chamber, it will be hard to get him out.

*D. P.* I

D. P. No soy cómo v. m. que no mira sino a las dâmas.

D. I. La curiosidad no es buena en casa agena; pero Agrânio haze à la dâma, el que no le mira la cara: por estos dos prouerbios, miro lo vno, y no quiero veér lo otro.

D. P. Tan grande agrânio haze al dueño de vna casa el que no mira su ajuar quando es bueno, como el que no mira la cara de la hermosa dama. Señor Don Alônso de quien es éste retrato?

D. A. De la mayor ramera de España.

D. I. Cuerpo de tal, con v. m. estas imâgenes tiene a su cabecera?

D. P. El señor Don Alônso me ha engañado, que lo tenia por mas deuoto.

D. A. Mas quisiéra que v. m. me tuuiera por el mayor rufián del mundo, porque como dize el refrán, *El galán deuoto es bobo, y el rufián galán.*

D. I. Yo conozco muchos caualléros, que no lo son; si no por este priuilegio de hauér engañado, y deshonorado à muchas simples, y ignorantes doncellas, casadas, y viúdas.

D. P. Elle es vn preuilegio rodado, por el qual se les déue el título de caualléros con tanta razón, como à los que se hallaron en Elepanto, o en el cerco de Ambers, mostrando su valór, y bañando su espada con mil muertes de los enemigos: pero muchos ay, que con solo el desseo que tienen de engañar à mil mugeres si pudiessen, se estiman por Caualléros; porque el desseo se repûta por hecho.

D. A. Esto me parece como hazen muchos Caualléros Francéses (o que dizen serlo) que bláñan, y se glórian muchas vézes de hauér dormido con vna mugér sin jamás le hauér llegado a vn pelo de narópa.

D. I. Que

D. P. I am not like you who looke after nothing but faire Ladies.

D. I. Curiosity is ill beseceming in an others house; but he doth wrong to a faire Lady that not beholds her: and following these two prouerbs, I respect the one, and doe neglect the other.

D. P. As much wrong doth hee to the master of a house, that taketh no note of his household stufte, when it is good, as he that not beholdeth the face of a beautifull woman. Señor Don Alônso, whose picture is this?

D. A. Of the veriest harlot in Spaine.

D. I. Body of me, haue you such Images at your beds head?

D. P. Señor don Alônso hath deceined me, I tooke him to be more deuout.

D. A. I had rather you should take me for the veriest Ruffin of the world, for as the prouerbe saith, The deuout gallant is an Idiot, an the ruffin a braue fellow.

D. I. I know many Gentlemen, which are not so, but by this priuiledge of hauing beguiled and dishonoured a number of simple and ignorant maids, married women, and widomes.

D. P. That is a common priuiledge, by which the title of Gentleman is due to them with as great reason, as to those who were present at Elepanto, or at siege of Antwerp, shewing their valor and bathing their swords in the blood of a thousand enemies. But there be many, that with onely a desire which they haue to deceine a thousand women if they could, esteeme themselves Gentlemen, taking their desire for the effect.

D. A. This me thinkes is like many French Gentlemen (or that so terme themselves) who often times glory and boast of hauing laine with a woman, and neuer touched a haire of her garment.

D. I. What



*D. I.* Que lláma v. m. llegádo al pelo de la rópa? El tiempo que estúue en Francia, espérimenté vna cosa que no la huuiéra creydo si me la huuiéran dicho, y fué que vn Caualléro llegó a vna conuerfación donde estáuan otros tres, y de vnas palábras en otras, vino a contar cómo la noche pasada hauía dormido con vna dáma, que nombró.

*D. A.* Ello fué mal hécho: los Españóles tenemos esto buéno, que aunque hazémos mal, aloménos no deshonrrámos a las dámas, que es vna vileza indigna de hombres, no solo que profésan civilidad, pero de rústicos villános. Prosiga v. m. si se síue.

*D. I.* Los dos de los tres que escucháuan se començaron a reyr; el Caualléro corrido preguntó la causa, y sabido que éra porque el tercéro dellos les hauía dicho poco antes lo mismo; dixo, que se hauía equiuocado, y que por dezir antes de ayér hauía dicho ayér. Esto causó otra mayór rísa, porque vno de los dos hauía dicho que el hauía estado con ella la misma nóche: finalmente disputando, y mintiendo cada vno lo mas que podía, al ruydo llegó otro Caualléro que conocía muy bien a la dáma, y hizo sabér a todos, que hauía mas de vn mes que estaua fuera de la córte, y cinquenta leguas de allí: al fin se verificó, que solo éste Caualléro la conocía, y que era vna de las damas mas hermosas, y honrradas de toda la córte, y que aquéllos quátro Caualléros no la conocían sino de oydas, y lo querían ser por esto, como poco ha díxe de los que lo quíeren ser solo por el desseo, que de engañar a las mugéres tiénen.

*D. P.* No les a conséjo véngan a España a dezir mal de las dámas délla, que les yrá mal, y se hallarán burládos, porque las Españólas no súfren cosquillas,

*D. I.* What doe you call touched the haire of her garments. At such time as I was in France, I made triall of a thing which I would neuer haue beleened had I beene told it: & it was that a Gentleman came to a conuersation where were thre other, and from one discourse to another, he came to tell how that the former night he had laine with a Lady, whom he named.

*D. A.* That was ill done: we Spaniards haue this good quality, that notwithstanding wee doe ill, at the leastwise we not dishonour the Ladies, which is a wickednesse most unbeseeming men, not onely that professe civilitie, but rude country clownes. Goe forward if it please you.

*D. I.* Two of the three which hearkened beganne to laugh; the Gentleman somewhat abashed enquired the cause, and knowing it was because the third of them had told the same but a little before; hee made answer that he had mistaken, and said yesterday for the day before. This caused a greater laughter, for so much as one of the two other had said that he was with her the same night: In the end disputing, and lying enery one the most he could, there came to the noyse another Gentleman, who very well knew the Lady, and gaue them all to understand, that she had beene aboue a moneth from Court, and fiftie leagues from thence: At last it was verified, that only this Gentleman knew her, that she was one of the most faire and vertuous Ladies of the Court, and that those foure knew her not, but by heare say, & would be Gentlemen for this, as I said but euen now of them that will only be so by the desire which they haue to ensnare women.

*D. P.* I doe not counsell them to come into Spain to speake ill of our Ladyes here, for it will goe ill with them if they doe, and they'll bee soundly flouted, for that

Spa:ish



y si házen del ojo a vno de sus máta siéte, Los embi-  
rán a cenár con Iesu Chrísto.

D. A. Diciendo, y haziendo, como la hornera al  
jarro; vámos a almorçar, que el almuerzo está junto  
a la fuente: siénten se vs. ms. si son seruidos.

D. I. Esto no haré yo para almorçar.

D. P. Ni yo tampoco. Esta es buena hiésca para  
despertár la sed.

D. A. La redóma está en la fuente, remedio apro-  
uado para élla.

D. I. No es malo el vino.

D. P. Uino sin água para la mañana.

D. A. Vs. ms. no comen?

D. I. No, porque estamos hartos.

D. P. Basta para oy.

D. A. Béuan otra vez, porque a bien comer, o mal  
comer; tres vézes se ha de beuer.

D. I. Buénos frutales ay en este huérto.

D. A. De todo, como pan de póya.

D. P. Esta parra es moscatel?

D. A. No es sino morate.

D. I. A la móça, y a la parra, álça le el alda. Nola  
han podádo este año.

D. A. Ni me tiro, ni me pago; Mi suegro es el Tu  
autem.

D. P. Que bien parecen estos encañicados Hénos  
de arrayanes: si yo tuuiése en mi jardín tan buenas,  
y espaciósas cállas, me exercitaria en ellas a correr la  
fortija.

D. A. No lo quiere permitir mi suégro, porque  
dize que le rompen los pimpólos.

D. P. De que es este inférto?

D. A. Decamuéfas.

D. I. Tiene

Spanish women cannot endure to be tickled, and if they  
poke but awry upon one of your great kill-cowes, they'll  
send him to prate of them in another world.

D. A. With saying and doing, the time passes away;  
let us goe to breakfast, for it stands fast by the fount:  
if it please yee.

D. I. That I will neuer to a breakfast.

D. P. Nor I neither. This is good to procure thirst.

D. A. The bottle is in the fountaine, an approved re-  
medy for it.

D. I. This wine is no ill one.

D. P. Wine without water is best for the morning.

D. A. Yee doe not eat Gentlemen.

D. I. No, because our bellies are full.

D. P. This is enough for to day.

D. A. Drinke once againe, for it is good to doe that  
well though one eate but little.

D. I. There be good fruit trees in this Orchard.

D. A. Of all sorts, good and bad together.

D. P. Is this high one a Muscadel vine?

D. A. No, it is a darke Claret.

D. I. A young mayde, and a high vine, must haue  
their coates lifted up. You haue not pruned it this yeare.

D. A. I neither meddle nor make with it; my fa-  
ther in law is the Tu autem.

D. P. How finely these Caneworks looke, being full  
of Mirtles: If I had so faire and spaciow alleyes in my  
Garden, I should exercise my selfe in running at the  
ring.

D. A. My father in law will not suffer it, for he saies  
that they breake the young sprouts.

D. P. Whereof is this graffe?

D. A. Of a kind of Pippins.

T 2

D. I. Is

D. I. Tiene pézes éste estanque ?

D. A. Si tiene : Muchas carpas, y algunos vá-  
bos.

D. P. De todos los pescados de agua dulce, el me-  
jor à mi gusto es la trucha.

D. I. Ninguno me agrada mas que la anguilla, si  
es pequeña.

D. A. No son malas las lampreas.

D. P. No les déuen nada las sabogas.

D. I. El Mayorazgo del Conde de Sastago murió  
con la espina de vna.

D. P. Que lindos clauéles ; quiero hazer vn ra-  
milléte con licencia del señor Don Alonso.

D. A. V. m. la tiene para disponer de todo a su  
gusto. Quiero ayudarle a cogér las flores.

D. P. No querría que v. m. me hiziesse esta mer-  
céd, porque para quien es, lo estimará en mas, si sabe  
que yo las he cogido.

D. A. Séa como v. m. mandare.

D. I. La fléma es buena : tómela acábe, esta rosa, y  
éste clauél encarnado. Ponga destas viólas blancas,  
amarillas, y moradas.

D. P. V. m. señor Don Iuán, tiene espíritu de  
contradicción.

D. I. No, sino estémonos aquí todo el dia. Vá-  
monos.

D. P. Entrémos a ver la caualleriça del señor  
Don Alonso.

D. A. No verán tantos, ni tan buenos cauállos,  
como en las de vs. ms.

D. I. Ayer compré vn morcillo, que me costó seys  
cientos ducados. No es malo este alacán.

D. P. Alacán. tostado, antes muerto que cansado.  
Quiere

D. I. Is there any fish in this Pond ?

D. A. Yes many Carpes, and some Barbels.

D. P. Of all freshwater fish, I like a Trout the best.

D. I. None pleaseth me better then the Eele, if it  
be a small one.

D. A. I account Lampries no ill fish.

D. P. Shaddes are not inferiour to them.

D. I. The Count of Sastago his eldest Sonne was kil-  
led with a bone of one.

D. P. What faire Gilliflowres be here ; I will make  
a Nosegay with Señor Don Alonsoes leane.

D. A. You haue it to dispose of all at your pleasure.  
He helpe you to gather the flowers.

D. P. I would not haue you doe me that fauour, for  
she for whom it is, will esteeme it the more, if she know  
that I haue gathered them.

D. A. Be it as you please.

D. I. I thinke you will neuer haue done : make an  
end, take this Rose, and this Carnation Gilliflowres ; put  
to these white, yellow, and sauny Violets.

D. P. You Señor Don Iohn haue a spirit of contra-  
diction.

D. I. No, but shall we stay here all day ? Lets goe.

D. P. Let vs goe see Señor Don Alonsoes stable.

D. A. You will not see so many, nor so good horses,  
as there be in your owne.

D. I. Yesterday I bought a little blackish horse, that  
cost me six hundred Duckets. This browne sorrell horse  
is no ill one.

D. P. A browne sorrell is sooner dead then wearied.  
Will

Quiére lo v. m. trocar por mi Ouéro?

D. A. Si v. m. se quiére seruir del, puede: mas trocarlo, no.

D. P. Beso las de v. m. por la que me haze.

D. I. Buéno es éste pótro: que edad tiene?

D. A. Dos años. Que le parece a v. m. de esterúcio rodado?

D. I. Bien, pero mas me agrada este váyo. Ha visto v. m. mi acanéa?

D. A. Si señor: de quien la compró v. m.

D. I. Troquéla por mi yégua

D. A. Quanto le tornaron encima?

D. I. Cinquenta ducados. Este cauállo blanco cabos negros, es el mejor que v. m. tiene. De donde ha comprado este frisón?

D. A. Mil años ha que le tengo: el Conde de Miranda me le dió.

D. P. Donde está su cauallerico?

D. A. Jugando, si viene a mano.

D. P. A fe de quien soy, que es muy curioso: no considera v. m. con que orden tiene las guarniciones de los cauállos? Esta silla ginetano está bien hecha, porque el arçón trasero es muy alto.

D. A. Que le parece a v. m. de ésta?

D. P. Que es al vfo. Quántos móços de cauállos tiene?

D. A. Nenguno buéno, y quátro que no válen náda.

D. P. Pues nos ha enseñado su cauallerica, muestre nos su recámara.

D. A. No verán en ella cosa que válgas.

D. I. Dexémoslo para otra vez, que es tarde; porque

Will you change him for my bald horse with the spotted belly?

D. A. If you please to haue him for you may: but change him I will not.

D. P. I kisse your hands for the fauour which you doe me.

D. I. This coult is a good one: what age is he of?

D. A. Two yeares old. How like you this dappled gray?

D. I. Well, but this bay horse pleaseth mee better. Haue you seene my nag?

D. A. Yes sir: of whom bought you him?

D. I. I changed him for my mare.

D. A. How much had you to boot?

D. I. Fifty duckets. This white horse with blacke feet, is the best you haue: where haue you bought this Freeland?

D. A. I haue had him these thousand yeares: the Count of Miranda gaue him me.

D. P. Where is your horse-rider?

D. A. At play if occasion be offered.

D. P. By my faith he is very curious: doe you not consider in what order he hath the harnessse of the horses? This saddle after the Genet fashion is very well made, for that the hinder pummell is very high.

D. A. What thinke you of this?

D. P. That it is according to the vse. How many horse-keepers haue you?

D. A. Neuer a good one, and foure that are worth nothing.

D. P. Since you haue shewed vs your stable, let vs behold your wardrop.

D. A. Ye will see nothing in it that's worth any thing.

D. I. Let vs leaue that for another time: for if

porque si el señor Don Pedro éntra vna vez, no lo sacarán de allí arempujones.

*D. P.* Vámos que al punto saldrémos.

*D. I.* V. m. es estremádo en todo señor Don Alonso : que de armas; parece que estamos en vn Almacén. No nóta v. m. la cantidad de mosquétas, arcabúzes, escopétas, pistolétes, y pistólas?

*D. P.* Estas lánças son boníssimas para tóros : los garrochónes no son malos si fueran mas largos. Iesús, que de chúzcos?

*D. A.* No téngo tantos que el otro día no se me fuéssen dos hermosíssimos jaulics, por no tener quatro mas.

*D. I.* Si v. m. huuiéra embiádo à mi cása, hallára en élla los necesários, y si haúa menestér algunos venábolos también.

*D. A.* Bésó las mãos de v. m. por la merced : las alabárdas súplen la fálta, particularmente quando voy à caça de ósos.

*D. P.* Esta es vna caça que aborrézco mucho, la de la çorra me agráda mas que ninguna otra.

*D. I.* No es mála la de venádos. Ayér fuy a caçar con mi vrón. Don Alvaro me díxo el otro día, haúa muérto tres liebres tan grandes, como tres nouillos.

*D. P.* Por mentir no se pága alcauála : que si se pagásse, no tenía esse caualléro renta para pagar las quèha hécho en vn año. A mi me díxo antes de ayér que haúa caçádo en vna nóche cinquenta perdizes a la lánterna; y si huuiéssse de contár las mentiras que cáda día me dize, sería nunca acabár : pero cómo ántes alcánçan al mentiróso, que al cójo. Le cogí ayér en vna tal, que por respécto del parentesco la cálló. Lo mejor dexáuamos por veér; que son estas valléttas,

Señor Don Pedro but get in once, one shall hardly boulder him out againe.

*D. P.* Come let us goe, wee'le haue done instantly.

*D. I.* You are extremely curious in all, Señor Don Alonso : what a company of armes; me thinks wee are in a storehouse. Doe you not obserue the quantity of Muskets, Arquebusses, Guns, Dags, and Pistals?

*D. P.* These Lances are excellent for bulls : The Darts be not ill if they were longer. Iesus, what a company of Speares!

*D. A.* I haue not so many but that the other day two most goodly Boares escaped me, for want of foure more.

*D. I.* If you had sent to my house, you should there haue found all necessaries, and if neede had beene some Iauclins also.

*D. A.* I kisse your hands sir for the fauour : halberts supply the want, particularly when I goe hunt Beares.

*D. P.* It is a chafewhich I much hate, that of the Fox I like better then any other.

*D. I.* That of the Hart is not ill. Yesterday I went to exercise my Ferret. Don Alvaro told the other day, that hee had killed three Hares, as bigge as three bullockes.

*D. P.* There is nothing to be paid for lying: if there were, that Gentlemans reuenues would not be sufficient to pay for the false tales, which in one tweluemoneth he hath made. He told me the other day that in one night he had taken fiftie Partriches with Batfowling; and if I should recount the lies that he enery day telleth me, it were neuer to make an end : but as the lyer is sooner ouertaken then the cripple, I caught him yesternooner in such a one, that for respect of his parentage I conceale

valléstas, y árcos? de donde son estos alfanjes?

*D. A.* De Damasco.

*D. I.* Taréa tenemos para vn mes. Quéda se v. m. señor Don Pedro?

*D. P.* Aguárde, véremos estas espádas, poluóra, y perdigones. Solo le falta al señor Don Alonso vna mugér.

*D. A.* Todo me sobra, no la teniendo.

*D. I.* Plática han comenzádo, que el diáblo la aguárde.

*D. A.* Suplico a vs. ms. me la hagan en quedárse a hazér penitencia.

*D. I.* Harta háze quien aguárda a la fléma del señor Don Pedro.

*D. P.* Y mucha mas quien súfre la coléra de v. m. No puedo recebir la del señor Don Alonso.

*D. I.* Ni yo tan póco.

*D. P.* Quando nos verémos?

*D. A.* Quando v. m. fuére seruído: si quiere después de comer.

*D. P.* Séa así, porque querría que viéste dos quádro, que sin falta le agradarán.

*D. I.* Déxe nos yr señor Don Alonso.

*D. A.* Mucha merced recibiría que no lo hiziessen.

*D. P.* Digale a su suégro que le beso las manos, y que el señor Don Iuán, y yo hemos venido a besárselas.

*D. A.* Haré lo que vs. ms. me mandan, y le diré la que le han hécho, y de la que he receuído de recudida,

conceale it. We leaue the best vnscene; what ones are these Crossebowes and Long bowes? From whence come these Semiters?

*D. A.* From Damasco.

*D. I.* We haue a taske for a whole moneth. Doe you remaine heere Señor Don Pedro?

*D. P.* Stay, we will see the swords, powder, and shot. Señor Don Alonso wanteth nothing but a wife.

*D. A.* I haue all things plentifully, not hauing her.

*D. I.* They haue begun a discourse which the deuill will not make an end off.

*D. A.* I beseech yee doe me the fauour as to stay to take penance.

*D. I.* He taketh enough that attendeth the slownesse of Señor Don Pedro.

*D. P.* And much more he that suffereth the hastinesse of your selfe. I cannot accept of the curtesie which Señor Don Alonso doth me.

*D. I.* Nor I neither.

*D. P.* When shall we see againe?

*D. A.* When it shall content you. After dinner if you please.

*D. P.* Be it so, for I desire to haue you see a couple of square pictures, which without doubt will bee to your liking.

*D. I.* Let vs goe Señor Don Alonso.

*D. A.* I should take it for a great fauour that yee would not.

*D. P.* Tell your father in law that I kisse his hands, and that Señor Don Iohn, and I haue come to visit him.

*D. A.* I will obey yee, and will tell him of the honor that yee haue done him, and will acquit my selfe of that which

dida, me esquitaré.

*D. P.* Si passa por casa de doña María, no déxe de hablárie, y tóquele en aquél negocio.

*D. A.* Yo me tengo buen cuydado.

*D. I.* Ay mas que encomendár?

*D. A.* V. m. tiene enbidia de la que el señor Don Pedro me háze.

*D. P.* Diga, que de Diós dixéron.

*D. I.* Vámos de aquí.

*D. P.* Vamos. Hasta que hora aguardaré a v. m?

*D. A.* Hasta las tres.

*D. P.* Si no viéne a las tres, me yré adonde sabe; al juégo de pelóta, o a casa del tablagéro.

*D. I.* Y si no, dê vn réal a vn pregonéro, que lo pregóne.

*D. P.* Aguárde.

*D. I.* El diáblo que lo espere.

*D. P.* A Diós que se va enojádo.

*D. A.* A Diós.

*Fin del Dialogo quarto.*

**DIALOGO**

*which by his default I have receiued.*

*D. P.* If you passe by Doña Maria's house, forget not to speake to her, and touch her in that businesse.

*D. A.* I shall be carefull thereof.

*D. I.* Is there yet more to recommend?

*D. A.* You doe envy the fauour which Señor Don Pedro doth me.

*D. P.* Let him say what he will, men haue spoken well of God before now.

*D. I.* Let us away.

*D. P.* Let's goe. Till what houre shall I expect you?

*D. A.* Till three a clocke.

*D. P.* If you come not at three, Ile goe you know whither; to Tennise, or to the Dicing-house.

*D. I.* And if not, giue six pence to a Cryer, that hee may proclaime it.

*D. P.* Stay.

*D. I.* The deuill it is that staies for you.

*D. P.* Farewell, for he is angry.

*D. A.* Farewell.

An end of the fourth Dialogue.

THE



**DIALOGO QUINTO,**  
**ENTRE VNA DAMA,**  
*ma, vn Escudero, vna Don-*  
*cella, y vn Page.*

**P.** **M**I señora quiere yr à Missa.

**Es.** **M**ira en Cóche?

**P.** Si, sino va a pie.

**Es.** Tanto dixéra vn asno, si supiera hablar.

**P.** Sin yr en Coche, podía yr en silla de manos, en litéra, en carro, o en barco.

**Es.** Bachillér de Sarméntera, si le tómó, le daré vna mano de cózes, que no se las quíte su madre.

**P.** No se enóge señor Peralta, que se hará viejo.

**Es.** No llégues a mis días velláco desvergonçado: Yo te júro por vida de mis hijos, que si te alcánço, te daré vn puntapie, que dê con ti en aquélla pared.

**P.** Si me cóge, yo le doy licéncia.

**Don.** Mendocica, que te lláma mi señora.

**Dam.** Que hazías allá baxo?

**P.** Dezía al Escudéro, que v. m. querria yra Missa.

*Dam.*



**THE**  
**FIFT DIALOGVE**  
**BETWEENE A LADY, AN**  
*Vsher, a Waiting Gentlewoman,*  
*and a Page.*

**P.** **M**Y Lady will goe to Masse.

**Vs.** **M**Will she goe in her Coach?

**P.** Yes, if she goe not on foot.

**Vs.** So much an Assc would say, if hee knew how to speake.

**P.** Beside her Coach, she might goe in a Chaire, in a Litter, in a Chariot, or in a Barke.

**Vs.** Thou whorson prater, if I catch thee, Ile so be-labour thee with kickes, that thy mother shall not take them off againe.

**P.** Be not cholericke Señor Peralta, youle make your selfe looke old.

**Vs.** Thou'lt neuer come to my yeares, thou shame-lesse villaine. I sweare unto thee that if I get thee, I will giue thee such a kicke with my toe, that shall strike thee against the wall.

**P.** If you catch me, I giue you leaue.

**G.** Mendocica, my Lady calls thee.

**L.** What mad'st thou there below?

**P.** I told your Vsher that you would goe to Masse.

*Lad.*

*Dam.* Y por ello corría tras ti?

*P.* Si señora.

*Dam.* Tu miéntes, yo te conózco, que eres vn costál de malicias, y vn mátalas calládo, que no haces sino perseguir a esse pobre viejo. Ve a casa de la señora doña Francisca de Montagúdo, dile que le beso las manos, que me haga saber cómo está, y adonde yrá a Missa; que si me aguarda en ella, yré por allí, y yrémos juntas. Ven presto. Saluatierra, llamáda Peralta.

*Don.* Señor Peralta, mi señora le llama.

*Es.* Quemánda v.m?

*Dam.* Id al conuénio de los Mercenários, y dezid al Padre Comendador que le beso las manos, que me la haga en hazérme guardár vna Missa, que se diga por mi intención en el altár preuilegiádo, y dádle vn réal por la limósna.

*Es.* Dos piden, si ha de ser en esse altár.

*Dam.* Dad se los.

*Don.* Que le dezía a v.m. aquél rapáz, señor Peralta?

*Es.* Es el mayor vellaco que ay en el mundo, y mi señora le da alas.

*Don.* No diga eso, que por vida de mi Padre, que le ha reñido.

*Es.* Sino huiérase huydo, yo le enseñara como se hauiá de burlár de vn hombre honrrádo.

*Don.* Yo le prométo que mi señora le hará castigar como meréce, y que no lo váya a pagar al otro mundo.

*Es.* Si ella no lo haze castigar, no irá a Roma, por penitencia. Saldrá luego de casa?

*Don.* A las once. Que ora es?

*Es.* Las

*Lad.* And for that did he run after thee?

*P.* Yes Madame.

*Lad.* Thou lyes, I know thy tricks, thou art a sacke of malice, and an Hypocrite that dost nothing but persecute that poore old man. Goe to Doña Francisca of Montagudo, tell her I kisse her hands, that I desire to know how she doth, and where she will heare Masse; that if she stay within for me, I will goe that way, and we will accompany one another. Come againe quickly. Saluatierra call hither Peralta.

*Gen.* Señor Peralta, my Lady calls you.

*Vs.* What is it you command me?

*Lad.* Goe to the conuent of the Mercy, and tell the Father Commendador I kisse his hands, and that I request him to doe me the fauour to keepe me a Masse, that may be said for my intention at the priuileg'd Altar, and giue him a Real for almes.

*Vs.* They demand two, if it be at that Altar.

*Lad.* Giue it them.

*Gen.* Señor Peralta, what did that rauenous boy say to you?

*Vs.* He is the veriest Rogue of the world, and my Lady maintaines him in't.

*Gen.* Doe not say so, for I vow that she bath chidden him.

*Vs.* Had he not bin too nimble for me, I would haue taught him to haue flouted an honest man.

*Gen.* I can assure you my Lady will make him bee corrected as he deserneth, and that hee goe not to pay for't in another world.

*Vs.* If shee doe not make him bee corrected, hee'le not goe vnto Rome for penance. Will she goe forth presently?

*Gen.* At nine. What a clocke is it now?

V

*Vs.* Ten



*Es.* Las diez. Voy me presto, antes que sea tarde. A Dios.

*Don.* A Dios señor Peralta.

*Dam.* Saluatierra.

*Don.* Señora.

*Dam.* Pensáys que me tengo de vestir óy?

*Don.* Si, si v. m. es servida.

*Dam.* Dadme vna camisa, con pechadúras negras. Este corpiño me es ancho. Que serviillas me days ay?

*Don.* Las de ayér. Que buena color de laços!

*Dam.* No me agrádan por ser verdes.

*Don.* A mi me parece, que es la mejor color que ay, por ser símbolo de la esperança.

*Dam.* A mi me enfada por ser tan ordinária, que no ay parte donde no se hálle. Dadme las medias de nacar, ligas verdes, con rapacejos de oro. Que chapines me dáys ay?

*Don.* Los dorados, con viras de plata: quiere v. m. otros mas vaxos?

*Dam.* No. Este Faldillín está muy desblaydo.

*Don.* Buena nueua para mi.

*Dam.* Toma os le, y dad me el de grana, con pasamanos de oro.

*Don.* Bésolas de v. m. mil vézes por la que me háze.

*Dam.* Esta vasquiña de terciopelo es muy pesada: dadme otra de ralo, o de rasetán.

*Don.* Quiere v. m. el jubón de tela de oro?

*Dam.* Dádme el que quisiéredes y sea presto. Traéd vn poco de albayalde, y de color. Que agua es ésta?

*Don.*

*Vs.* *Ten.* I goe instantly, ere it be later. Farewell.

*Gen.* Farewell Señor Peralta.

*Lad.* Saluatierra.

*Gen.* Madame.

*Lad.* Doe you thinke that I shall need to make mee ready to day?

*Gen.* Yes, if it so please you.

*Lad.* Gine me a smocke, wrought on the brest with blacke. These bodices are too wide for me. What pumps doe you gine me there?

*Gen.* Those you wore yesterday. What a good colour the ribbands be of.

*Lad.* I like them not, for that they are Greene.

*Gen.* Me thinkes 'tis the best colour that is, being the symbole of hope.

*Lad.* And I am weary of it, because it is so ordinary, that one shall finde it in euery place. Gine mee the stockings of pearle colour, my Greene garters fringed with gold. What high corke shooes doe you set mee?

*Gen.* The gilt ones, with plates of silver: will you haue others that be lower?

*Lad.* This petticoate is very much faded.

*Gen.* Good newes for mee.

*Lad.* Take you it, and gine me that of scarlet, with gold lace.

*Gen.* I doe most humbly thanke you for this fauour.

*Lad.* This kirtle of veluet is very heavy, gine me another of Sattin, or of Taffata.

*Gen.* Will you haue your doublet of cloth of gold?

*Lad.* Gine me which you please, and let it be quickly. Bring a little white and red. What water is this?

*Gen.*

*Don.* De lustre. Vn gato rompió el otro día vn pote de Alcohol, y vna redóma de agua de Angeles.

*Dam.* Mas quisiéra que huuiéra rompido todos los vídrios de cása. Dádme las pincéras. El vello me crece tanto, que parece lo toma a estájo.

*Don.* A mi me parece se arránca mejor con vna etra de séda, y con mas breuedád.

*Dam.* Así es, pero háze mas mal. Las céjas se me pelan, y así me es forçoso hazérlas cada día. Están bien?

*Don.* Como héchas de nuéuo.

*Dam.* Los diénte se me dañan: Dad me los poluillos, hiéles, y vntos, para limpiárlas.

*Don.* Muchas damas áy, que se loán, y precian de tenérlos tan bláncos como piñones, que no llégan con quinze, y falta à los de v. m.

*Dam.* No sé de que se me arúga la frénce: No ciérto de los áños.

*Don.* Mil doncéllas áy, que ayér salieron (segun ellas dízen) de mantillas, que pueden ser mádres de v. m.

*Dam.* Peinádme bien. Parece que tengo algúnos cauéllos blancos: son cánas?

*Don.* No son, sino lunáres.

*Dam.* Burláyfos de mi?

*Don.* Nunca Diós tal permíta; pero parece me, que según la poca edád que v. m. tiéne, es imposible ser lo.

*Dam.* Quanta pensáys que tengo?

*Don.* No muéstra v. m. tenér véynte y dos años.

*Dam.* No penséys yr muy enganñáda: que aunque mi niéto tiéne véynte, yo téngo muy pocos mas; porque

*Gen.* Of lustre. A cat the other day broke a pot of Alcohol, and a viol of water of Angels.

*Lad.* I had rather he had broken all the glasses in the house. Giue me the little pinsers. The haire grows so fast, it seemeth that it hath taken it to task.

*Gen.* Me thinkes, with a threed of silke it commeth up better by the roote, and that more speedily.

*Lad.* It is true, but it does more hurt. My eye-browes pill, and so I am constrained to make them euery day: Are they well?

*Gen.* As if they were new made.

*Lad.* My teeth are spoiled: Reach me the powders, galles, and oyntments to make them cleane with.

*Gen.* There be many Ladies that praise themselves, and boast of hauing them as white as the kernels of a Pine-apple, which haue not fiftene in their heads, and those black in comparison of yours.

*Lad.* I know not why my fore-head growes wrinkled: It is not surely with age.

*Gen.* There are a thousand young maids, that went but yesterday (as they say) out of their swadling clouts, which well may be your mothers.

*Lad.* Combe me thorowly. Me thinkes I haue some white haire: are they gray ones?

*Gen.* No, but of a pale colour like the Moone.

*Lad.* Doe you mocke me?

*Gen.* God forbid that; but I take it, that according to your little age, it is impossible to be so.

*Lad.* How old doe you thinke I am?

*Gen.* You doe not make shew to be aboue two and twenty.

*Lad.* Doe not thinke that you are much deceined: for though my nephew be twenty, I am but little more; for

porque su madre y yo, nos casamos niñas, mas áy  
cuyra ! que en pasando las mugéres de véynte años,  
nos llaman viejas. Dadme otros cercillos, y otras  
arracádas. Trençádme bien : que cintas son ellas ?

Don. Acúles.

Dam. Con razón dirá Don Sancho que tengo  
zélos ; y en mi alma, que los tiéne el mayores de mi.

Don. Y con razón.

Dam. Por qué ?

Don. Porque la hermosúra, los causa siémpre.

Dam. No tiéne de que tenerlos ; aunque si yo  
diéssse cydos á los muchos que me solicitan, y andan  
muertos por mi, no se escaparía de la común miséria,  
de que pocos de los que tiénen mugéres hermosas  
escápan : mas la honrra que hasta aóra me ha dádo  
fuérças para resistir á los múchos contrástes, hará  
que lléue adelante mi buen desseo, aunque bien se  
que no faltan murmuradóres.

Don. Serán los despreciádos ; que quando no  
pueden cogér el fruto de sus desleos, se tornan,  
como el perro, al palo. Quiére v. m. la garganúlla  
de périlas ?

D. Dádme la que quisiéredes. Ponédme el cin-  
tillo de diamántes.

Don. Quiére v. m. ponérse ésta ropa de rico ? o  
la de rasetán mosqueado ?

Dam. Ni la vna, ni la otra : dádme la de terciopé-  
liso : venga la gorguera, los puños, la cadena de corá-  
les, mi rosário, guantes, y manguito : no olvidéys  
mis horas. Quién está ay ?

Don. El Páge.

Pa. La señóra Doña Francisca bésa las de v. m.  
mil vézes por la que le háze, que está á seruício de  
v. m.

for that his mother and I were married when we were  
little ones. But O vexation ! that passing once twenty  
yeares, they call us women old. Give me other Eare-  
rings, and pendants, Plat my haire well : what ribbards  
be those ?

Gen. Blew ones.

Lad. Don Sancho will say with reason that I am  
jealous ; and on my soule, himselfe is far more then I.

Gen. And it is reason.

Lad. Why ?

Gen. Because beauty doth alwaies occasion it.

Lad. He hath not any cause to be so ; although if I  
gave eare to so great a company as sollicite me, and are  
almost dead for me, he should not be able to avoid the  
common miserie, from which but few that haue beauti-  
ous wines escape. But the honour that hath hitherto  
giuen me force to resist the many strifes, will cause me  
to passe further in my good desire, although I am not  
ignorant that there want not murmurers.

Gen. They be those which are themselves despised ;  
who when they cannot gather the fruit of their desires,  
they turne as the dog to the cudgell. Will you haue your  
carkanet of pearle ?

Lad. Give me which you please. Put me on my gir-  
dle of Diamonds.

Gen. Will you haue on this gowne of unshorne Vel-  
vet, or that of taffata with small pinkes ?

Lad. Neither the one, nor the other : Give me that  
of plaine velvet. Bring me my gorget, my russe-cuffs,  
my chaine of Corall, my beads, gloves, and muffle : doe  
not forget my Hóures : Who's there ?

Gen. The Page.

Pa. Doña Francisca kisseth your hands a thousand  
times for the fauour you doe her, being ready to doe  
you

v. m. y que por óy no piénsa salir de cása, por hallarse vn poco indispuésta.

*Dam.* Peralta tarda mucho, mirád si ha venido.

*Don.* Si señora, y díze que vn fráy le aguarda a v. m. vestido en el altar.

*Dam.* Que gallárda necesidad ! porque no me lo hauíades dicho antes ?

*Don.* En éste punto acába de llegár.

*Dam.* Vámos presto, hazéd lleuár vn maridíco porque haze frio. Que hora es Peralta ?

*Es.* Las onze, tres quártos, y médio.

*Pa.* Válate el diáblo el viéjo, y que puntual es en sus palábras.

*Don.* Calla, que si te óye se dará a las fúrias : y o le he prometido ésta mañana, que mi Señora te haría castigar.

*Pa.* El diáblo me lleue, que si por éste viéjo podrído me açotássen ; no le dexaría barbas en la cara.

*Don.* Y o le diré para contentárle que te han açotado.

*Pa.* No se lo diga, que no, quiéro dárle éste gusto. Aquí tengo vn viiléte para v. m.

*Don.* De quién ?

*Pa.* De Don Francisco de Bobadilla.

*Don.* Lo buéno es que mi señóra se persúade, que viéne a casa por amor della.

*Pa.* Así es, pero para que le sirua de alcahuéta. Esta Sarra piénsa, que el mundo se muére por ella.

*Don.* Si la huuiéras oydo ésta mañana, rebentáras de reyr ; porque diziéndole yo, que no se le echaua de veér tener mas de véynete años, me respondió, que tenía muy pocos mas.

*Pa.* Verdád es que no son sino quarénta mas.  
Escúche,

*you seruice ; but as for to day she thinketh not to stir forth, because she findes her selfe a little ill.*

*Lad.* Peralta is very long, see if he be come.

*Gen.* Yes Madame, and saies that a Frier staves for you readie vested at the Altar.

*Lad.* What a fine follie is this ! Why had you not told me so before ?

*Gen.* He came but very now.

*Lad.* Let us goe quickly, make a little chafindish be brought, for it is cold. What a clocke is it Peralta ?

*Vs.* Nine, three quarters, and a halfe.

*Pa.* The deuill helpe this old fellow, how punctuall he is in his words.

*Gen.* Peace, for if he chance to heare thee, hee'll become furious : I haue promis'd him this morning, that my Lady should make thee be corrected.

*Pa.* The deuill take me, if I should be beaten for this old rotten coxcombe, if I would leane him one haire on his face.

*Gen.* Ile tell him to content him, that thou hast beene beaten.

*Pa.* Doe not tell him so, for I will not cause him so much pleasure. I haue here a little letter for you.

*Gen.* From whom ?

*Pa.* From Don Francisco of Bobadilla.

*Gen.* The best is, that my Lady perswades her selfe he comes to her house for the loue of her.

*Pa.* True, but to the end that she serue him for a bawd. This old Sara thinks the world dies for her.

*Gen.* Had'st thou heard her this morning, thou would'st haue burst with laughing, for I telling her that she seemed not to be aboue twentie yeares of age, she made me answer, that she was but a few more.

*Pa.* It is true that she is but fortie more.  
Harke,

Escúche, escuche, como se le quexa el buen Matusalén; los dos son para en vno. Quiére que le léa este villéte,

Don. Si, pero lécle váxo, de modo que no lo oygan.

Pa. Van tan embecuidos, que no oyrian si les gritássen como a sordos. El sobre escrito dize assí. *A mi señora doña Lucia Saluatierra.*

Don. Acába lécle antes que lleguemos a la Iglésia.

Pa. Señora desta alma, que no respíra, ni tiéne otra vida, sino la que recíue del resplandór de vuestrós serónos, y diuinos ójos: suplicoos los mostréys benignos, y misericordiáfos a mis justos, y humildes ruegos; los quáles van encaminádos a sólo suplicáros, saquéys de prisión, y tarménto a este escláuo, que por vos péna, asegurándoo, que la razón que me fuérça, y constriñe a amáros; essa hará que mi vida, fuérças, salud, y taléto, se emplearán para siémpre en vuestro seruicio: de quien quédo comfiádo: aunque indigne amante.

*El que viniéndo muére, y muriéndo vive,  
por amor de vos.*

Pa. Par Diós buena; si esta carta huuiéra recebido mi señora, estuuiéra tan ancha, que le pudieran poner vn nabo por el rabo.

Don. Dame el villéte; y si le vécs, dile que yo le daré la respuéssta ésta noche, por el balcón a la vna. Te ha dádo algo?

Pa. Vn réal de à quatro, duro como vna piedra, y me ha prometido vna espáda vieja, con sus tiros.

Don.

Harke, harke, how the good Mathusalem complains, they are a couple well met. Shall I read you this short letter?

Gen. Yes, but softly, so that they may not heare it.

Pa. Their mindes are so carried away, that they would not heare should one crie out to them as the deafe. The superscription saith thus, To my Mistresse Doña Lucia Saluatierra.

Gen. Make an end of it before wee come to the Church.

Pa. Lady of this soule, which hath no life nor being, saue that it receineth from the splendor of your serene and diuine eies: I beseech you shew them benigne, and pittifull, to my iust and humble petitions; which only tend to excite you that you free from prison and torment this miserable slave, who for you tormenteth, assuring you that the reason which forceth and constraineth me to loue you, shall make that my life, power, health, and talent, be employed for euer in your seruice, of whom I remaine confident: Although an unworthy louer.

*He which lining dieth, and dying liueth,  
for the loue of you.*

Pa. By loue a good one; if my lady had receined this letter, she would haue beene so puffed up with glory, that one might haue thrust a turnep into her taile.

Gen. Giue me the letter; and if thou see'st him, tell him he shall haue an answer at one a clocke this night, out at the bay window. Has he giuen thee any thing?

Pa. A peece of foure Reals, hard as a stone, and hee ha's promis'd me an old sword, with his hangers.

Gen.

*Don.* Tu sacarás mas del queyo.

*Dam.* Dádmemis Hóras.

*Pa.* Señor Peralta, quiere venir a vna pastelería en-  
tretanto que mi señora óye Misa? comerémos vn  
pastél de a réal, y cada dos vezes de blanco, y váyad  
diáblo para ruyn.

*Es.* Tiénes dinéros?

*Pa.* Vn réal de a quatro.

*Es.* Par Diós tu éres el mejor hombre del mun-  
do; yoteámo, como si fuésses mi hijo. Vamos adon-  
de quisiéres. Cuérpo de tal, que buénos pastéles.

*Pa.* No es malo el blanquillo: Nuéstra ama pen-  
sará que estamos ganándo las estaciones.

*Es.* Que mejores estaciones, que visitár las her-  
mitas de Baco?

*Pa.* Quiére que comámos otro pastél?

*Es.* No áy cosa en el mundo que te dé gusto, que  
a mi no me agráde; mas despachémos, que la Misa  
se acabará.

*Dam.* Donde está Peralta?

*Don.* Allí viéne con el page, Ya han hécho las  
amistádes.

*Dam.* De donde venís? Algunas vezes estáys  
como perros, y gatos, otras perezéys la maça, y la  
mona.

*Don.* De donde venís Mendoça?

*Pa.* De refrescár la palábra.

*Don.* Hauéys estado en la Tauérna?

*Pa.* No, pero en vna pastelería.

*Don.* Tanto se me da ocho como ochénta, si los ocho  
son diézes. Hauéys hécho las amistádes?

*Pa.* Si, al modo de los montañéses, con la taça  
en las mãos.

*Don.* De manera que seréys amigos de taça de  
vino. Has escotádo?

*Pa*

*Gen.* Thou shalt get more out of him then I.

*Lad.* Giue me my Houres.

*Gen.* Señor Peralta will you goe to a Piemakers shop,  
while my Lady is hearing Masse? Wee'll eat a sixpenny  
pye, and each of vs two cups of whitc wine, and let the  
Deuill be packing for a rogue.

*Vs.* Hast thou any money?

*Pa.* A peece of foure Reals.

*Vs.* By Ioue thou art the best lad in the world; I loue  
thee as if thou wert my sonne. Let's goe whither thou  
wilt. Body of me what good Pies be these.

*Pa.* The Whitewine is not bad: Our mistresse will  
thinke we are gaining the indulgence of the stations.

*Vs.* What better stations be there, then to visit the  
hermitages of Bacchus?

*Pa.* Shall we haue another Pie?

*Vs.* There is nothing in the world that may content  
thee, which not pleaseth me; but let's dispatch, for  
Masse will be ended.

*Lad.* Where is Peralta?

*Gen.* There he comes with the Page, they are al-  
ready friends.

*Lad.* From whence come ye? Sometimes ye are like  
Dogges and Cats, and other times like the Monckie,  
and his clogge.

*Gen.* From whence com'st thou Mendoça?

*Pa.* From refreshing the throat.

*Gen.* Haue ye beene at the Tauerne?

*Pa.* No, but at a Pie-makers shop.

*Gen.* The ones as good as the other, being both alike.  
Are yee friends then?

*Pa.* Yes, after the manner of the Mountainers, with  
a cup in hand.

*Gen.* So that you'l be good table friends. Hast thou  
paid the shot?

*Pa.*

*Pa.* Yo lo he pagado todo.

*Don.* Toma este vizcócho, y estas seys rosquillas que me ha dado el Comendador.

*Pa.* Es su deuoto.

*Don.* No, mas yo lo soy súya, para que me encomiende a Diós acuérdate de dar la respuésta del villéte.

*Pa.* No tiéne que encargárme lo: a Diós, que mi Señóra me lláma.

*Don.* A Diós.

*Fin del quinto, y ultimo Dialogo.*

*Pa.* I have paid it all.

*Gen.* Take this bisket, and these six little rolles which the Commendador hath given me.

*Pa.* He is your deuoted.

*Gen.* No, but I am his, to the end that hee recommend me to God. Remember thou to give the answer of the letter.

*Pa.* You haue nothing to doe to put mee in charge with it: Farewell, my Lady calls me.

*Gen.* Farewell.

*An end of the fifth, and last Dialogue.*